

0161-5890(93)E0005-7

# REVIEW

# ANATOMY OF THE ANTIBODY MOLECULE

EDUARDO A. PADLAN

Laboratory of Molecular Biology, National Institute of Diabetes and Digestive and Kidney Diseases, National Institutes of Health, Bethesda, MD 20892, U.S.A.

(Received 1 June 1993; accepted 1 October 1993)

Abstract—The structures of the various regions of an antibody molecule are analysed and correlated with biological function. The structural features which relate to potential applications are detailed.

Key words: X-ray structures, antibody-ligand interactions, polyreactivity, humanization strategies.

### INTRODUCTION

In terms of structure, antibodies are probably now the most studied of all proteins. Amino acid and nucleotide sequence data are available for thousands of different chains (Kabat *et al.*, 1991) and three-dimensional structures, obtained by X-ray crystallographic analysis, are available for whole antibodies and for a variety of fragments. Very recently, all parts of an antibody molecule have been visualized (Harris *et al.*, 1992), including the hinge which, previously, either was only partly discernible in the electron-density map because of its flexibility (Marquart *et al.*, 1980), or was deleted (Sarma *et al.*, 1971; Silverton *et al.*, 1977; Sarma and Laudin, 1982; Rajan *et al.*, 1983) in the intact antibodies analysed by X-ray diffraction.

The antibody fragments whose structures have been elucidated crystallographically include several human and murine  $V_L$  dimers (Epp *et al.*, 1974, 1975; Fehlhammer *et al.*, 1975; Colman *et al.*, 1977; Furey *et al.*, 1983; Stevens *et al.*, 1981; Steipe *et al.*, 1992), Fv from murine and human antibodies (Bhat *et al.*, 1990; Fan *et al.*, 1992) including a "humanized" murine Fv (Eigenbrot *et al.*, 1993), several Bence–Jones light-chain dimers (Schiffer *et al.*, 1973, 1989; Ely *et al.*, 1985), Fc from human and rabbit IgG (Deisenhofer, 1981; Sutton and Phillips, 1983) and pFc' from guinea pig IgG (Bryant *et al.*, 1985). The structure of the complex of human IgG1 Fc and fragment B of protein A from *Staphylococcus aureus* has also been determined (Deisenhofer, 1981).

By far, the fragment which has been the most studied is the Fab, with the structures of several dozen Fabs of different ligand-binding specificities having been elucidated by X-ray diffraction, many with bound specific ligand. The ligands range in size from small haptens to macromolecules. The small ligands include phosphocholine (Padlan *et al.*, 1973, 1985; Segal *et al.*, 1974), a hydroxy derivative of vit.  $K_1$  (Amzel *et al.*, 1974), a dinitrophenyl-spin-label hapten (Bruenger *et al.*, 1991), fluorescein (Herron *et al.*, 1989), digoxin (Bruenger, 1991) and progesterone (Wilson *et al.*, 1991). The bigger ligands include oligopeptides, like cyclosporin A (Altschuh et al., 1992; Vix et al., 1993), angiotensin II (Garcia et al., 1992), a 19-amino acid peptide homolog of a myohemerythrin helix (Stanfield et al., 1990), a 15-residue long peptide derived from cholera toxin (Shoham et al., 1991) and a nonapeptide from influenza virus hemagglutinin (Rini et al., 1992), and fragments of other macromolecular antigens, like a trinucleotide of deoxythymidylic acid (Herron et al., 1991) and a trisaccharide epitope of a branched bacterial lipopolysaccharide (Cygler et al., 1991). The macromolecular ligands include lysozyme (Amit et al., 1986; Sheriff et al., 1987; Padlan et al., 1989; Fischmann et al., 1991; Lescar et al., 1993), influenza virus neuraminidase (Colman et al., 1987, 1989; Tulip et al., 1989, 1992a, b), HIV-1 reverse transcriptase (Arnold et al., 1992), and even another Fab in an idiotope-anti-idiotope complex (Bentley et al., 1990). In addition, X-ray structures are available for an Fab complexed with streptococcal protein G (Derrick and Wigley, 1992), for a chimeric Fab in which the variable domains were from a murine antibody and the constant domains were from human molecules (Brady et al., 1992), and for two versions of a "humanized" murine Fab (Eigenbrot et al., 1993).

The availability, in some cases, of both complexed and uncomplexed structures for the same antibody permits the evaluation of the possibility of conformational changes occurring upon ligand binding. Previously, with phosphocholine and vit.  $K_1OH$ , no conformational changes in the Fabs were observed when these small ligands were bound in the crystal (Padlan *et al.*, 1973, 1985; Segal *et al.*, 1974; Amzel *et al.*, 1974). More recent studies with larger ligands reveal that significant changes can occur upon complexation (Bhat *et al.*, 1990; Stanfield *et al.*, 1990; Herron *et al.*, 1991; Wilson *et al.*, 1991; Rini *et al.*, 1992).

Starting soon after crystallographic data became available, various aspects of antibody structure and function have been the subject of analysis, including the distribution of the different amino acid types in relation to ligand-binding specificity (e.g. Kabat *et al.*, 1977;

Table 1. Immunoglobulin structures which have been determined by X-ray crystallography

| Antibody    | Isotype            | Fragment              | PDB Code | Resolution | R-value | Ligand                           | Reference                                  |
|-------------|--------------------|-----------------------|----------|------------|---------|----------------------------------|--|
| (Human)     |                    |                       |          |            |         |                                  |  |
| Dob         | $(IgG1,\kappa)$    | whole Ig              |          | 4.0        |         |                                  | Sarma and Laudin (1982)                    |
| Kol         | $(IgG1, \lambda)$  | whole Ig              | 2IG2     | 3.0        | 0.207   |                                  | Marquart et al. (1980)                     |
| Mcg         | $(IgG1,\lambda)$   | whole Ig              |          | 2.8        |         |                                  | a  |
| NEW         | $(IgG1,\lambda)$   | Fab                   | 7FAB     | 2.0        | 0.169   |                                  | Saul and Poljak (1992)                     |
|             |                    | Fab                   |          | 3.5        |         | vit. K <sub>1</sub> OH           | Amzel et al. (1974)                        |
| Kol         | $(IgG1,\lambda)$   | Fab                   | 2FB4     | 1.9        | 0.189   |                                  | Marquart et al. (1980)                     |
| Hil         | $(IgG1,\lambda)$   | Fab                   | 8FAB     | 1.8        | 0.173   |                                  | b  |
| 3D6         | (IgG1,κ)           | Fab                   | 1DFB     | 2.7        | 0.177   |                                  | He et al. (1992)                           |
| POT         | (IgM,κ )           | Fv                    | lIGM     | 2.3        | 0.201   |                                  | Fan et al. (1992)                          |
|             | (IgG1)             | Fc                    | 1FC1     | 2.9        | 0.22    |                                  | Deisenhofer (1981)                         |
|             | (IgG1)             | Fc                    | 1FC2     | 2.8        | 0.24    | fragment B                       | Deisenhofer (1981)                         |
|             |                    |                       |          |            |         | of Protein A                     |  |
| Mcg         | (λ)                | L-dimer               | 2MCG     | 2.0        | 0.187   |                                  | Ely et al. (1989)                          |
|             |                    |                       | 3MCG     | 2.0        | 0.208   |                                  | Ely et al. (1989)                          |
| LOC         | ( <i>i</i> , )     | L-dimer               | 1BJL     | 3.0        | 0.194   |                                  | Chang et al. (1985)                        |
|             |                    | L-dimer               | 2BJL     | 2.8        | 0.216   |                                  | Schiffer et al. (1989)                     |
| Mcg-Weir    | (λ)                | L-dimer               | 1MCW     | 3.5        | 0.170   |                                  | Ely et al. (1985)                          |
| REI         | (κ)                | V <sub>L</sub> -dimer | 1REI     | 2.0        | 0.24    |                                  | Epp et al. (1975)                          |
| Au          | ( <i>к</i> )       | V <sub>L</sub> -dimer |          | 2.5        | 0.31    |                                  | Fehlhammer et al. (1975)                   |
| Rhe         | (λ)                | V <sub>L</sub> -dimer | 2RHE     | 1.6        | 0.149   |                                  | Furey et al. (1983)                        |
| ROY         | (K)                | V <sub>L</sub> -dimer |          | 3.0        | 0.33    |                                  | Colman <i>et al.</i> (1977)                |
| Wat         | ( <i>к</i> )       | V <sub>L</sub> -dimer |          |            |         |                                  | Stevens et al. (1981)                      |
| ("Humanize  | ed" murine)        | F                     | IFVO     |            | 0.102   |                                  |  |
| 4D5         |                    | FV                    | IFVC     | 2.2        | 0.183   |                                  | Eigenbrot <i>et al.</i> (1993)             |
|             |                    | Fab                   |          | 2.5        | 0.179   |                                  | Eigenbrot <i>et al.</i> $(1993)$           |
| (Murino hu  | man ahimara        | гао                   | IFVE     | 2.7        | 0.171   |                                  | Eigenbrot <i>et al.</i> (1993)             |
| R72 3       | man chimera        | Fab                   | 1881     | 2.1        | 0.176   |                                  | $\mathbf{P}_{\mathbf{r}}$ dy at al. (1002) |
| (Murine)    |                    | 1 40                  | 1003     | 5.1        | 0.170   |                                  | Brady et al. (1992)                        |
| Mab231      | (IgG2a)            | whole Ig              |          | 3.5        | 0.188   |                                  | Harris et al. (1992)                       |
| McPC603     | $(IgA, \kappa)$    | Fab                   | 1MCP     | 2.7        | 0.225   |                                  | Satow et al. (1986)                        |
|             |                    | Fab                   |          | 3.1        | 0.196   | phosphocholine                   | C'   |
| J539        | (IgA,κ)            | Fab                   | 2FBJ     | 1.95       | 0.194   |                                  | d  |
| D1.3        | (IgG1,κ)           | Fab                   | IFDL     | 2.5        | 0.184   | lysozyme                         | Fischmann et al. (1991)                    |
|             |                    | Fab                   |          | 2.6        | 0.27    |                                  | Bentley et al. (1989)                      |
| NC41        | (IgG2a,κ)          | Fab                   | INCA     | 2.5        | 0.191   | influenza virus<br>neuraminidase | Tulip <i>et al.</i> (1992a)                |
|             |                    | Fab                   | 1NCC     | 2.5        | 0.212   | neuraminidase                    | Tulip et al. (1992b)                       |
|             |                    | Fab                   | INCB     | 2.5        | 0.165   | neuraminidase                    | Tulip et al. $(1992b)$                     |
|             |                    | i uo                  | псер     | 2.0        | 0.105   | N329D mutant                     | Tunp (? u. (19920)                         |
|             |                    | Fab                   | INCD     | 2.9        | 0.157   | influenza virus<br>neuraminidase | Tulip <i>et al.</i> (1992a)                |
| HyHEL-5     | ( <b>IgG</b> 1,κ)  | Fab                   | 2HFL     | 2.54       | 0.245   | lysozyme                         | Sheriff et al. (1987)                      |
| HED10       |                    | Fab                   |          | 3.0        | 0.272   |                                  | Cygler et al. (1987)                       |
| CF4C4       | (IgG1,κ)           | Fab                   |          | 4.0        | 0.470   |                                  | Vitali <i>et al.</i> (1987)                |
| Jel42       |                    | Fab                   |          | 3.5        | 0.282   |                                  | Prasad et al. (1988)                       |
| NC10        |                    | Fab                   |          | 3.0        | 0.20    | influenza virus<br>neuraminidase | Tulip et al. (1989)                        |
| HyHEL-10    | (IgG1, $\kappa$ )  | Fab                   | 3HFM     | 3.0        | 0.246   | lysozyme                         | Padlan et al. (1989)                       |
| 4-4-20      | $(IgG2a, \kappa)$  | Fab                   | 4FAB     | 2.7        | 0.215   | fluorescein                      | Herron et al. (1989)                       |
| R19.9       | (IgG2b, $\kappa$ ) | Fab                   | 2F19     | 2.8        | 0.182   |                                  | Lascombe et al. (1992)                     |
|             |                    | Fab                   | 1FAI     | 2.7        | 0.189   |                                  | Lascombe et al. (1992)                     |
| E225        | $(IgG2b,\kappa)$   | Fab                   |          | 2.5        | 0.179   | D1.3 Fab                         | Bentley et al. (1990)                      |
| B13I2       | (IgG1,κ)           | Fab                   | 2IGF     | 2.8        | 0.22    | myohemerythrin<br>peptide        | Stanfield et al. (1990)                    |
|             |                    | Fab                   | 1IGF     | 2.8        | 0.18    |                                  | Stanfield et al. (1990)                    |
| MAb131      | (IgG1, $\kappa$ )  | Fab                   |          | 3.0        | 0.25    | angiotensin II                   | Garcia et al. (1991)                       |
| BV04-01     | (IgG2b, $\kappa$ ) | Fab                   |          | 2.66       | 0.191   | d(pT) <sub>3</sub>               | Herron et al. (1991)                       |
|             |                    | Fab                   |          | 2.0        | 0.246   |                                  | Herron et al. (1991)                       |
| Table 1. Co | ntinued over       | leaf.                 |          |            |         |                                  |  |

|              |                   |            |               | Table   | 1Continue | d                              |                               |
|--------------|-------------------|------------|---------------|---------|-----------|--------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| 36-71        | ( <b>I</b> gG1,κ) | Fab        | 6FAB          | 1.85    | 0.248     |                                | Strong et al. (1991)          |
| AN02         | $(IgG1,\kappa)$   | Fab        | 1BAF          | 2.9     | 0.195     | DNP-spin-label<br>hapten       | Bruenger et al. (1991)        |
| NQ10/12.5    | (IgG1, <i>k</i> ) | Fab        |               | 2.8     | 0.182     | 1                              | Alzari et al. (1990)          |
|              |                   | Fab        |               | 3.0     | 0.19      | 2-phenyl-oxazolone             | Alzari et al. (1990)          |
| TE33         |                   | Fab        |               | 3.0     | 0.386     | cholera toxin<br>peptide       | Shoham <i>et al.</i> (1991)   |
| Se155-4      | $(IgG1,\lambda)$  | Fab        |               | 2.05    | 0.185     | dodecasaccharide               | Cygler et al. (1991)          |
| 26-10        |                   | Fab        |               | 2.7     | 0.17      | digoxin                        | Bruenger (1991)               |
|              |                   | mutant Fal | 0             | 2.5     | 0.21      | U                              | Bruenger (1991)               |
| B13A2        |                   | Fab        |               |         |           |                                | Wilson et al. (1991)          |
| HC19         | $(IgG1,\lambda)$  | Fab        |               | 3.5     | 0.176     |                                | Bizebard et al. (1991)        |
| DB3          | $(IgG1.\kappa)$   | Fab        |               | 2.8     |           |                                | Wilson et al. (1991)          |
|              |                   | Fab        |               | 2.4     |           | progesterone                   | Wilson <i>et al.</i> $(1991)$ |
|              |                   | Fab        |               | 2.8     |           | iodobenzoyl<br>progesterone    | Wilson <i>et al.</i> (1991)   |
|              |                   | Fab        |               | 3.0     |           | l 1α-hemisuccinyl progesterone | Wilson et al. (1991)          |
| R454511      | $(IgG1.\kappa)$   | Fab        |               | 2.65    | 0.185     | cyclosporin A                  | Altschuh et al. (1992)        |
| mAb28        |                   | Fab        |               | 7       |           | HIV-1 reverse                  | Arnold et al. (1992)          |
|              |                   |            |               |         |           | transcriptase<br>and DNA       |                               |
| Jel72        |                   | Fab        |               |         |           |                                | e                             |
| Jel318       |                   | Fab        |               |         |           |                                | f                             |
|              |                   | Fab        |               |         |           | protein G                      | Derrick and Wigley (1992)     |
| Yst9-1       | $(IgG2b.\kappa)$  | Fab        | 1MAM          | 2.5     | 0.215     | protoni o                      | g                             |
| 17/9         | $(IgG2a,\kappa)$  | Fab        | 1HIN          | 3.1     | 0.22      | hemagglutinin<br>peptide       | Rini et al. (1992)            |
|              |                   | Fab        | 1HIM          | 2.9     | 0.20      | hemagglutinin<br>peptide       | Rini et al. (1992)            |
|              |                   | Fab        | 1 <b>H</b> IL | 2.0     | 0.19      |                                | Rini et al. (1992)            |
| 8F5          | $(IgG2a,\kappa)$  | Fab        | 1BBD          | 2.8     | 0.190     |                                | Tormo et al. (1992)           |
| F9.13.7      | (0)               | Fab        |               | 4.0     | 0.409     | guinea-fowl lysozym            | eLescar et al. (1993)         |
| D1.3         |                   | Fv         |               | 2.4     | 0.19      | lvsozvme                       | Bhat <i>et al.</i> (1990)     |
|              |                   | Fv         |               | 1.9     | 0.19      | 5 5                            | (,                            |
| McPC603      |                   | V,         | 11MM          | 2.00    | 0.149     |                                | Steipe <i>et al.</i> (1992)   |
|              |                   | V.CDR-1    | IIMN          | 1.97    | 0.149     |                                | Steipe et al. $(1992)$        |
|              |                   | replaced   |               |         | 011.0     |                                | Storpe et un (1352)           |
| (Rabbit)     |                   |            |               |         |           |                                |                               |
| (            | (IgG)             | Fc         |               | 2.7     |           |                                | Sutton and Phillips. (1983)   |
| (Guinea nio  | (- <u>5</u> 0)    |            |               | <b></b> |           |                                | Satisfi una Timipo, (1903)    |
| Comments Pie | (IgG1)            | pFc'       | 1PFC          | 3.125   | 0.303     |                                | Bryant et al. (1985)          |

aGuddat, Edmundson and Herron (to be published), cited in Kabat et al. (1991).

<sup>b</sup>Saul and Poljak (to be published), cited in PDB Entry: 8FAB.

<sup>e</sup>Padlan, Cohen and Davies (in preparation).

<sup>d</sup>Bhat, Padlan and Davies (in preparation).

<sup>e</sup>Mol, Muir, Lee and Anderson (unpublished), cited in Kabat et al. (1991).

<sup>1</sup>Muir, Cygler, Mol, Lee and Anderson (unpublished), cited in Kabat et al. (1991).

<sup>g</sup>Rose, Przybylska, To, Kayden, Oomen, Vorberg, Young and Bundle (to be published), cited in PDB Entry: 1MAM.

Padlan, 1990a; Mian et al., 1991), interdomain interactions (e.g. Poljak et al., 1975a, b, 1976; Davies et al., 1975a, b; Amzel and Poljak, 1979; Davies and Metzger, 1983; Novotny et al., 1983; Novotny and Haber, 1985; Chothia et al., 1986; Padlan et al., 1986; Schiffer et al., 1988; Miller, 1990), flexibility (e.g. Edmundson et al., 1974, 1978, 1987; Burton, 1985, 1990a, b; Huber and Bennett, 1987; Lesk and Chothia, 1988; Ely et al., 1989; Rini et al., 1992; Davies and Padlan, 1992), hypervariable region structures (e.g. Padlan and Davies, 1975; Potter et al., 1976; Padlan, 1977a; De la Paz et al., 1986; Chothia and Lesk, 1987; Chothia et al., 1989, 1992; Tramontano et al., 1990; Wu et al., 1993), disulfide bridges (e.g. Steiner, 1985), and antibody-ligand interactions (e.g. Padlan et al., 1976; Huber, 1986; Mariuzza et al., 1987; Alzari et al., 1988; Colman, 1988; Davies et al., 1988, 1990; Wilson et al., 1991; Davies and Chacko, 1993). In addition to X-ray crystallography, other techniques have been used to study antibody structure, including two-dimensional NMR (e.g. Anglister, 1990; Theriault et al., 1984; Morrison and Oi, 1988; Bird *et al.*, 1988; Huston *et al.*, 1988; Winter, 1989; Tan *et al.*, 1990; Helm *et al.*, 1991; Glockshuber *et al.*, 1992; Jin *et al.*, 1992) and theoretical analysis (e.g. Novotny *et al.*, 1989; Novotny and Sharp, 1992).

Here, we will analyse the currently available three-dimensional data on antibodies which have been obtained by crystallographic analysis, focusing on those structural features which relate to antibody function and potential applications. The crystallographically-determined structures, which are known to the author, are listed in Table 1. The present analysis is limited to those structures for which atomic coordinates are available at the time of writing from the Protein Data Bank (PDB) (Bernstein *et al.*, 1977; Abola *et al.*, 1987), or have been kindly made available by the original investigators.

The studies on antibody structure are too many to enumerate and only a limited number of references could reasonably be cited. It is hoped that the citations given can serve as starting points for those who are interested in particular aspects of antibody structure. Several comprehensive reviews have been written recently on the subject (e.g. Mariuzza *et al.*, 1987; Alzari *et al.*, 1988; Colman, 1988; Davies *et al.*, 1988, 1990; Wilson *et al.*, 1991; Davies and Chacko, 1993) and the reader is encouraged to consult those also.

#### Caveat

Only a few of the structures listed in Table 1 have been determined to high resolution (2.0 Å or better) and refined extensively (to crystallographic R-values of 0.20 or better), so that the errors associated with many of the structures could be large. An example of a highly-refined structure is J539 Fab, which has been determined to 1.95-Å resolution and refined to an R-value of 0.194 (PDB Entry: 2FBJ); for J539 Fab, the error in the atomic coordinates, estimated by the method of Luzzati (1953), is 0.25 Å (Bhat, Padlan and Davies, unpublished results). An example of a structure determined at medium resolution is HyHEL-5 Fab, which has been determined to 2.54-Å resolution and refined to an R-value of 0.245 (Sheriff et al., 1987); the estimated error for HyHEL-5 Fab is 0.40 Å. These error estimates are for the most ordered (usually, interior) regions of the molecule; the errors will be larger for exposed segments, especially for the side chain atoms. For structures that have been determined to lower resolution or that have been refined less extensively, the errors are probably higher. In view of the potentially large errors in the individual structures, it would be prudent to look for trends from the analysis of the whole set of structures than to draw conclusions on the basis of only one.

#### THE STRUCTURE OF ANTIBODIES

An antibody molecule is composed of three major fragments: the two Fabs, which are identical and each of which contains the light chain and the first two domains of the heavy chain, and the Fc, which contains the C-terminal constant domains of the two heavy chains. The Fabs are linked to the Fc by the hinge region, which varies in length and flexibility in the different antibody classes and isotypes. The antigenbinding sites (paratopes) are located at the tips of the Fabs. A representation of human IgG1 antibody is shown in Fig. 1.

From the earliest studies of antibody structure (Poljak et al., 1973, 1974; Schiffer et al., 1973; Epp et al., 1974; Segal et al., 1974), it was clear that all antibody domains, whether variable or constant, form compact globular structures with a characteristic fold, termed the Immunoglobulin Fold by Poljak et al. (1973). Each domain consists of a stable arrangement of hydrogen-bonded, anti-parallel  $\beta$ -strands which form a bilayer structure, further stabilized by a disulfide bond between the two layers. In the variable domains, the bilayer structure is formed by nine strands; in the constant domains, the bilayer is formed by seven Bends of different sizes and conforstrands. mations connect the strands. The predominant secondary structure in antibodies is the anti-parallel  $\beta$ sheet, with short stretches of  $\alpha$ -helix found in some bends.

The variable domains of the light and heavy chains, the  $V_L$  and  $V_H$ , are similar to each other in three-dimensional structure, as are the constant domains: the  $C_L$  of the light chain and the  $C_H 1$  of the heavy chain in the Fab, and the  $C_H 2$  and the  $C_H 3$  domains in Fc $\gamma$ . Homologous domains from different species are very similar and are essentially superposable. Even in the variable domains, where as much as 30% of the residues could be different among different antibodies, the differences in structure are almost entirely confined to the hypervariable regions (Wu and Kabat, 1970), and usually only if length differences exist in those regions (Padlan and Davies, 1975).

The availability of three-dimensional data for a variety of fragments from different antibody classes and isotypes and from different species, helps in the identification of structurally important features and of analogous structural elements. An attempt to align representative sequences from the various human antibody chain types on the basis of structure is made in Table 2. For purposes of this review, the C-terminus of the Fd, the heavy-chain component of the Fab, is defined as the Cys residue at position 220 [Eu numbering (Edelman et al., 1969)] in human IgG1, or the analogous residue in the other heavy chain classes; the disulfide bridge, which Cys220 forms with the Cys at 214 in the light chain, creates a natural (structural) boundary for the Fab. Accordingly, the hinge is defined as starting with the Asp221 in human IgG1, or analogous residue. In the only available Fc structure (PDB Entries: 1FC1 and 1FC2), the first visible residue, which is probably the first residue in the compact portion of the Fc, is Pro238. Again, for purposes of this review only, we will define the Fc as starting with the Pro238 in human IgG1, or analogous residue in the other heavy chain classes, and define the end of the hinge as the residue preceding Pro238.



Fig. 1. Line drawing representation of a possible structure for human IgG1. The drawing is a composite of the crystal structures of human IgG1, Kol [Marquart *et al.* (1980); PDB Entry: 21G2], which is visible only to the inter-heavy chain cystine at 229 (Eu numbering), and of human IgG1 Fc [Deisenhofer (1981); PDB Entry: 1FC2], which is visible only from Pro238 to Leu443 (Eu numbering). The octapeptide, PAPELLGG, between Cys229 and Pro238 has not been visualized and its probable location is indicated by the unconnected circles in the middle of the figure. Only the  $\alpha$ -carbons are traced. The heavy chains are drawn with thick lines, the light chains with thin lines. The domains of the light chain (V<sub>L</sub> and C<sub>L</sub>) and those of the heavy chain (V<sub>H</sub>, C<sub>H</sub>1, C<sub>H</sub>2 and C<sub>H</sub>3) are labeled. Also indicated is the hinge, the region that lies between the Fabs and the Fc and which varies considerably in size in the different antibody types. The CDR residues are drawn with larger open circles at the tips of the Fabs. The disulfide bridges are indicated by filled circles. The carbohydrate moieties attached to the asparagines at position 297 (Eu numbering) are drawn with thin lines between the two C<sub>H</sub>2 domains.

#### The structure of Fabs

The Fab structures which are examined here are those of the murine J539 (PDB Entry: 2FBJ), McPC603 with and without bound phosphocholine (PDB Entry: 1MCP and unpublished results of Padlan, Cohen and Davies), HyHEL-10 (PDB Entry: 3HFM), HyHEL-5 (PDB Entry: 2HFL), R19.9 (PDB Entry: 2F19), 4-4-20 (PDB Entry: 4FAB), BV04-01 with and without bound  $d(pT)_3$ (atomic coordinates kindly made available by Dr Allen B. Edmundson and coworkers), 36-71 (PDB Entry: 6FAB), B13I2 with and without bound peptide (PDB Entries: 2IGF and 1IGF, respectively), D1.3 (PDB Entry: 1FDL), Yst9-1 (PDB Entry: 1MAM), AN02 (PDB Entry: 1BAF), 17/9 with ligand in two crystal forms (PDB Entry: 1HIN and 1HIM, the latter with two Fabs in the asymmetric unit of the crystal) and without ligand (PDB Entry: 1HIL, with two Fabs in the asymmetric unit of the crystal), NC41 with bound neuraminidase (PDB Entry: 1NCA) and 8F5 (PDB Entry: 1BBD), and those of the human Kol (PDB Entry: 2FB4), NEW (PDB Entry: 7FAB), Hil (PDB Entry: 8FAB, with two

#### E. A. PADLAN

#### Table 2. Structural alignment of human antibody domains

|                            |          |               |          |           |           |              | The         | VATIAD    |       |             |           |        |         |         |                  | ,             |         |
|----------------------------|----------|---------------|----------|-----------|-----------|--------------|-------------|-----------|-------|-------------|-----------|--------|---------|---------|------------------|---------------|---------|
|                            |          | 10            | 20       | [ CDR     | -1)<br>30 | 40           | (<br>50     | CDR-2     | 1 60  |             | 70        |        | 80      | l<br>90 | CDR-3            | ,<br>100      |         |
| vĸ                         | DIQMTQS  | PSSLSASVO     | DRVTITC  | QASQD     | IIKYLNWY  | <br>QQTPGKAP | KLLIYEA     | SNLC      | AGVPS | RFSGSG      | SGTC      | YTFTIS | SLQPEDI | ATYYCOC | 2YQ5             | LPYTFGOGTKL   | 21-     |
| <b>u</b> .                 | OFUL TOP | <br>P-SASCTRO |          |           | CSSTVNWY  |              | <br>KLLTYRD | AMRE      | SGVPD | RESGSK      | <br>SGA5  | ASLATG | GLØSEDE | TDYYCA  | <br>AWDVS        | -LNAYVFGTGTKV | <br>rvi |
| ~1                         | Q3V DIQE |               | 2.001100 | .00100111 | [CDR-1]   | Quin oran    | (           | CDR~2     | ]     |             |           |        |         |         | { CDR-3          | ]             |         |
|                            |          | 10            | 20       | 3         | 0         | 40           | 50          | 60        | )     | 70          |           | 82a    | рс      | 90      | 100              | 1             | 10      |
| Vu                         | EVOLVOS  | G-GGVVQPC     | RSLRLSC  | SSSGFIF   | SSYAMYWV  | ROAPGKGI     | EWVAIIW     | DDGSDQHYA | DSVKG | RFTISR      | NDSKNI    | LFLOMD | SLRPED  | GVYFCAR | <br>RDGGHGFC5SAS | CFGPDYWGQGTPV | <br>rvs |
| 'n                         |          | . –           |          |           |           | The          | Const       | ent Dom   |       | To Th       | • Ta      | h      |         |         |                  |               |         |
|                            |          |               |          |           |           | 144          | conse       | and Dom   |       |             | • • •     |        |         |         |                  |               |         |
|                            | 110      | 120           |          | 130       | 140       | 15           | 0           | 160       | 170   |             | 180       | 1      | 90      | 200     | 210              |               |         |
| C,                         | RTVAAPS  | <br>VFIFPPS   | DEQLKSG  | TASVVCL   | LNNFYPR-  | EAKVQWKV     | DNALQSG     | NSQESVTED | DSKDS | TYSLSS'     | TLTLSK    | ADYEKH | KVYACEV | THOGLSS | PVTKSFNRGEC      |               |         |
|                            |          | • • • •       | *****    |           |           |              |             | ••• ••    |       | ••••        | • • • • • | ****   |         |         |                  |               |         |
| C7                         | QPKANPT' | VTLFPPS       | SEELQAN  | KATLVCL   | ISDFYPG-  | AVTVAWKA     | DGSPVKA     | GVETTKPSK | QS-NN | KYAASS'     | YLSLTP    | EQWKSH | RSYSCOV | THEGS   | STVEKTVAPTEC:    | s             |         |
|                            | 120      |               |          |           |           |              | 0           |           |       |             |           | 0      |         |         |                  | 0             |         |
| γ1 C <sub>H</sub> 1        | ASTKGPS  | VFPLAPS       | SKSTSGG  | TAALGCL   | VKDYFPE-  | PVTVSWNS     | GALTS       | GVHTFPAVL | QS-SG | LYSLSS      | VVTVPS    | SSLG-T | DTYICNV | NHKPSNT | KVDKKAEPKSC      |               |         |
| γ2 C <sub>H</sub> 1        | ASTKOPS  | VFPLAPC       | SRSTSES  | TAALGCL   | VKDYFPE-  | PVTVSWNS     | GALTS       | GVHTFPAVI | QS-SG | LYSLSS      | VVTVPS    | SNFG-T | 2TYTCNV | DHKPSNT | KVDKTVERKCC      |               |         |
| <b>ү</b> зс <sub>н</sub> 1 | ASTKGPS  | VFPLAPC       | SRSTSGG  | TAALGCL   | VKDYFPE-  | PVTVSWNS     | GALTS       | GVHTFPAVI | QS-SG | LYSLSS      | VVTVPS    | SSLG-T | OTYTCN  | NHKPSNI | TKVDKRVELKTP     |               |         |
| γ4 C <sub>H</sub> 1        | ASTKGPS  | VFPLAPC       | SRSTSES  | TAALGCL   | VKDYFPE-  | PVTVSWNS     | GALTS       | GVHTFPAVI | QS-SG | LYSLSS      | VVTVPS    | SSLG-T | KTYTCNV | DHKPSNT | KVDKRVESKYG      |               |         |
| α1 C <sub>H</sub> 1        | ASPTSPK  | VFPLSLC       | S-TQPDG  | NVVIACL   | VQGFFPQE  | PLSVTWSE     | SGQGVTA     | RNFPPSQDA | SGD   | LYTTSS      | QLTLPA    | TOCLAG | KSVTCHV | кну1    | NPSQDVTVP-C      |               |         |
| α2 C <sub>R</sub> 1        | ASPTSPK  | VFPLSLD       | S-TPODG  | NVVVACL   | VQGFFPQE  | PLSVTWSE     | SCONVTA     | RNFPPSQDA | SGD   | LYTTSS      | OLTLPA    | TOCPDG | KSVTCHV | KHY7    | NPSQDVTVP-C      |               |         |
| δ c <sub>H</sub> 1         | APTKAPD  | VFPIISGC-     | RHPKDNS  | PVVLACL   | ITGYHPT-  | SVTVTWYM     | GTQSQPQ     | RTFPEIQRF | DSY   | YMTSSQ      | LSTPLC    | QWRQ   | GEYKCVV | QHTASKS | SKKEIFRWPESP     |               |         |
| е с <sub>н</sub> 1         | ASTOSPS  | VFPLTRCCM     | NIPSNAT  | SVTLGCL   | ATGYFPE-  | PVMVTWDT     | GSLNGTT     | MTLPATTLT | LSG   | HYATIS      | LLTVSG    | AWAK   | MFTCRV  | AHTPSST | DWVDNKIFSVC      |               |         |
| μc <sub>H</sub> 1          | SASAPT   | LFPLVSC-1     | NSPSDTS  | SVAVGCL   | AQDFLPD-  | SITFSWKY     | KNNSDIS     | STRGFPSVL | RGGKY | AATSQV      | LLPSKC    | VMQGTD | EHVVCKV | QHPNG   | SNKEKNVPLPV-     |               |         |
|                            |          |               |          |           |           | The          | 'Hinge'     | Domain    | s of  | Ig <b>E</b> | And       | IgM    |         |         |                  |               |         |
| E Cu2                      | SRDFTPP  | TVKILOSSO     | DGGGHFP  | PTIOLLC   | LVSGYTPG  | TINTTWLE     | DG-OVMD     | VDLSTAST1 | OEGEL | ASTO        | SELI      | LSOKHW | LSDRTY  | COVTYO  | HTFEDSTER        |               |         |

μ C<sub>H</sub>2 - -IAELPPKVSVFVPPRDGFFGNPRKSKLICQATGFSPRQIQVSWLRECKQVGSGVTTDQVQAEAKESGPTTYKVTSTLTIKESDWLGQSMFTCRVDHRGLTFQQNASSM

#### Hinge Peptides

230

|                  | ****  |
|------------------|---|
| <b>γ1</b> hinge  | DKTHTCPPCPAPELLGG   |
| γ2 hinge         | VECPPCPAPPV-AG  |
| γ3 hinge         | LGDTTHT-CPRCPEPKSCDTPPPCPRCPEPKSCDTPPPCPRCPEPKSCDTPPPCPRCPAPELLGG       |
| γ4 hinge         | PPCPSCPAPEFLGG  |
| <b>0</b> 1 hinge | PVPSTPPTPSPSTPPTPSPSH   |
| <b>012</b> hinge | РУРРРРССн   |
| ð hinge          | ${\tt KAQASSVPTAQPQAEGSLAKATTAPATTRNTGRGGEEKKKEKEKEEQEERETKTPECPSHTQP}$ |
| ε hinge          | C-ADSNPRG   |
| µ hinge          | C-VPDQDTA   |

#### The Penultimate Domain In IgG Fc And Homologous Domains

|                      | 240       | 250        | 260           | 270        | 280         | 290         | 300                                     | 310           | 320                  | 330          | 340                 |
|----------------------|-----------|------------|---------------|------------|-------------|-------------|---|---------------|----------------------|--------------|---------------------|
|                      | • • • • • | *****      | • • • • • • • |            |             |             | • | *****         | · · <i>· ·</i> · · · | · · · · ·    |                     |
| γ1 C <sub>H</sub> 2  | PSVFLFP   | PKPKDTLMIS | RTPEVTCVVV    | DVSHEDPEVK | FNWYVDGVEV  | HNAKTKPREE  | QY-NSTYRVV                              | SVLTVLHQDWLNG | KEYKCKVSN            | KALPAPIEKTIS | KAK                 |
| 7/2 CH2              | PSVFLFP   | PKPKDTLMIS | RTPEVICVVV    | DVSHEDPEVQ | FNWYVDGVEV  | HNAKTKPREE  | QF-NSTFRVV                              | SVLTVVHQDWLNG | KEYKCKVSN            | KGLPAPIEKTIS | KTK                 |
| γз с <sub>н</sub> 2  | PSVFLFP   | PKPKDTLMIS | RTPEVICVVV    | DVSHEDPEVQ | FKWYVDGVEV  | HNAKTKPREE  | QY-NSTFRVV                              | SVLTVLHQDWLNG | KEYKCKVSN            | KALPAPIEKTIS | KTK                 |
| γ4 C <sub>N</sub> 2  | PSVFLFP   | PKPKDTLMIS | RTPEVTCVVV    | DVSQEDPEVQ | FNWYVDGVEV  | HNAKTKPREE  | QF-NSTYRVV                              | SVLTVLHQDWLNG | KEYKCKVSN            | KGLPSSIEKTIS | KAK                 |
| α1 C <sub>H</sub> 2  | PRLSLHR   | PALED-LLLG | SEANLTCTLT    | GLR-DASGVT | FTWTPSSGKS  | AVQGPPER    | DL-CGCYSVS                              | SVLPGCAEPWNHG | KTFTCTAAY            | PESKTPLTATLS | KS                  |
| α2 C <sub>H</sub> 2  | PRLSLHR   | PALED-LLLG | SEANLTCTLT    | GLR-DASGAT | FTWTPSSGKS  | AVQGPPER    | DL-CGCYSVS                              | SVLPGCAQPWNHG | ETFTCTAAH            | PELKTPLTANIT | KS                  |
| δ C <sub>H</sub> 2   | LGVYLLT   | PAVQD-LWLR | DKATFTCFVV    | GSDLKDAH   | LTWEVAGKVP  | TGGVEEGLLE  | RHSNGSQSQH                              | SRLTLPRSLWNAG | TSVTCTLNH            | PSLPPQRLMALR | EPA                 |
| E CH3                | VSAYLSR   | PSPFD-LFIR | KSPTITCLVV    | DLAPSKGTVN | LTWSRASGKP  | VNHSTRKEEK  | QR-NGTLTVT                              | STLPVGTRDWIEG | ETYQCRVTH            | PHLPRALMRSTT | KTS                 |
| μ C <sub>H</sub> 3   | IRVFAIP   | PSFAS-IFLT | KSTKLTCLVT    | DL-TTYDSVT | ISWTRONGEA  | VKTHTNISES  | HP-NATESAV                              | GEASICEDDWNSG | ERFTCTVTH            | TDLPSPLKQTIS | RPKG                |
| • •                  |           |            |               |            |             |             |   |               |                      |              |                     |
|                      |           |            |               | The        | Last Dom    | ain In I    | gG Fc An                                | d Ecmologou   | s Domain             |              |                     |
|                      |           | 350        | 360           | 370        | 380         | 390         | 400                                     | 410           | 420                  | 430          | 440                 |
|                      |           |            |               |            |             |             | ••                                      | •••••         | ****                 |              |                     |
| γ1 C <sub>H</sub> 3  | GOPREPOV  | YTLPPSREE  | M-TKNQVSLT    | CLVKGFYPSD | IAVEWESNGQ  | PENNYKTTPP  | VLDSD                                   | GSFFLYSKLTVDB | SRWQQGNVF            | SCSVMREAL    | HNHYTQKSLSLSPGK     |
| γ2 C <sub>H</sub> 3  | GOPREPOV  | YTLPPSREE  | M-TKNQVSLT    | CLVKGFYPSD | IAVEWESNGQ  | PENNYKTTPP  | MLDSD                                   | GSFFLYSKLTVDB | SRWQQGNVF            | SCSVMHEAL    | HNHYTQKSLSLSPGK     |
| γ3 c <sub>H</sub> 3  | GOPREPOV  | YTLPPSREE  | M-TKNOVSLT    | LVKGFYPSD  | IAVEWESSGO  | PENNYKTTPP  | MLDSD                                   | GSFFLYSKLTVDK | SRWQQGNIF            | SCSVMHEAL    | HNRFTQKSLSLSPGK     |
| γ4 C <sub>H</sub> 3  | GOPREPOV  | YTLPPSQEE  | M-TKNQVSLT    | LVKGFYPSD  | IAVEWESNOO  | PENNYKTTPP  | VLDSD                                   | GSFFLYSRLTVDK | SRWQEGNVF            | SCSVMHEAL    | HNHYTQKSLSLSLGK     |
| α1 C <sub>H</sub> 3  | GNTFRPE   | HLLPPPSEE  | LALNELVTLT    | LARGESPKD  | VLVRWLOGSQ  | ELPREKYLTW. | ASRQEPSOGT                              | TTFAVTSILRVAA | EDWKKGDTF            | SCMVGHEAL    | PLAFTQKTIDRLAGK     |
| α12 C <sub>H</sub> 3 | GNTFRPE   | HLLPPPSEE  | LALNELVTLT    | LARGESPKD  | VLVRWLOGSO  | ELPREKYLTW  | ASRQEPSQGT                              | TTFAVTSILRVAA | EDWKKGDTF            | SCMVGHEAL    | PLAFTQKTIDRLAGK     |
| δ c <sub>H</sub> 3   | AQAPVKLS  | SLNLLASSDP | PEAASWLLG     | CEVSGFSPPN | ILLMWLEDQRI | EVNTSGFAPA  | RPPPQPRS                                | TTFWAWSVLRVPA | PPSPQPATY            | TCVVSHEDSRTL | LNASRSLEVSYVTDHGPMK |
| ε C <sub>B</sub> 4   | GPRAAPE   | YAF-ATPEW  | PGSRDKRTLAG   | LIQNFMPED  | ISVOWLHNEV  | DEPDARHSTT  | QPRKTKG                                 | SGFFVFSRLEVTR | AEWEOKDEF            | ICRAVHEAA    | SPSQTVQRAVSVNPGK    |
| µс <sub>н</sub> 4    | VALHRPDV  | YLLPPAREQ  | LNLRESATIT    | CLVTGFSPAD | VFVQWMQRGQ  | PLSPEKYVTS  | APMPEP-QAP                              | GRYFAHSILTVSE | EEWNTGETY            | TCVA-REAL    | PNRVTERTVDKSTGK     |

Secondary structure from program DSSP of Kabsch and Sanders (1983) on 3D6 (PDB Entry: 1DFB) for V $\kappa$  and C $\kappa$ , on Kol (PDB Entry: 2FB4) for V $\lambda$ , C $\lambda$ , V<sub>H</sub> and C<sub>H</sub>1, and on human IgG1 Fc (PDB Entry: 1FC1) for C<sub>H</sub>2 and C<sub>H</sub>3. Residues which participate in the  $\beta$ -sheets are indicated by (.); those which are in  $\alpha$ -helices are indicated by (\*). The numbering scheme for the V<sub>L</sub>, V<sub>H</sub> and C<sub>L</sub> domains follows the convention of Kabat *et al.* (1991); Eu numbering (Edelman *et al.*, 1969) is used for the IgG1 constant domains. The domains of J539 and Kol Fab, which are two of the most highly-refined Fab structures listed in Table 1, were used in the structural alignment; the other sequences were aligned on the basis of their sequence similarity to these two.

Fabs in the asymmetric unit of the crystal) and 3D6 (PDB Entry: 1DFB). The human Fv, POT (PDB Entry: 1IGM), was included in the analysis where appropriate.

In the Fab (Fig. 2),  $V_L$  and  $V_H$  associate closely to form a compact module, the Fv, and are related by a pseudo-dyad; the constant domains in the Fab, the C<sub>L</sub> and the  $C_H l$ , likewise form a compact module and are also related by a pseudo-dyad (Table 3). On average, the  $V_L - V_H$  contact buries approximately 1420 Å<sup>2</sup> of surface area (720 in  $V_L$  and 700 in  $V_H$ ). The  $V_L-V_H$  contact varies from antibody to antibody (Table 4) and differences are found even for the same Fab but crystallized in different crystal forms. The  $C_L-C_H 1$  contact (Table 4) buries approximately 1710  ${\rm \AA}^{\bar{2}}$  of surface area (870 in  $C_L$  and 840 in  $C_{H}$ 1) and, here also, some variation is found in the contacts present in supposedly identical  $C_L-C_H 1$ pairings. The variation seen in the identical  $C_L-C_H 1$ pairings may reflect the different lattice forces to which the molecules are subjected in the different crystal forms, the errors in the crystallographic analysis of these structures, or both.

In both light and heavy chains, the variable and constant domains are linked by a short segment of polypeptide chain, called the switch. Visual inspection of the Fab structures (for example, Fig. 2) identifies the switch peptides as residues 107, 108 and 109 in the light chains and residues 113, 114 and 115 in the heavy chains [numbering scheme of Kabat *et al.* (1991)]. Residue 106a is missing in  $\kappa$  chains so that the switch region in  $\kappa$  chains is shorter by one residue than those in  $\lambda$  chains and heavy chains. The relative disposition of the variable and constant modules is usually described by the angle between the V<sub>L</sub>-V<sub>H</sub> and C<sub>L</sub>-C<sub>H</sub>1 pseudo-dyads. This angle is called the "elbow bend" of the Fab and is variable, in view of the flexibility of the switch. The Fab

bend ranges from a tight  $127.2^{\circ}$  (in Fab 8F5, PDB Entry: 1BBD) to an almost straight  $176.2^{\circ}$  (in Fab R19.9, PDB Entry: 2F19) (Table 3, Fig. 3). In all cases known to date where the Fab is bent, the Fd is more bent than the light chain, i.e. the angle between  $V_{\rm H}$  and  $C_{\rm H}1$  is less than that between  $V_{\rm L}$  and  $C_{\rm L}$ ; this has been attributed to the presence of smaller side chains in the interface between  $V_{\rm H}$  and  $C_{\rm H}1$  (Segal *et al.*, 1974).

#### The Fv

On the basis of sequence variation, the residues in the variable domains are assigned either to hypervariable or complementarity-determining regions (CDRs), or to nonhypervariable or framework regions (Wu and Kabat, 1970). The CDRs of the light chain are defined as being comprised of residues 24-34 (CDR1-L), 50-56 (CDR2-L) and 88-97 (CDR3-L); those of the heavy chain contain residues 31-35 (CDR1-H), 50-65 (CDR2-H) and 95-101 (CDR3-H) [numbering convention of Kabat et al. (1991)]. Variations in length accompany the variability in sequence in these CDRs, with CDR3-H displaying particularly large length variations (Kabat et al., 1991). The framework regions in V<sub>1</sub> are defined as being comprised of residues 1-23 (FR1-L), 35-49 (FR2-L), 57-87 (FR3-L) and 98-107 (FR4-L); those in  $V_H$  contain residues 1-30 (FR1-H), 36-49 (FR2-H), 66-94 (FR3-H); and 102-112 (FR4-H).

In three-dimensions, the CDRs are seen as loops mainly situated at the N-terminal tip of the Fab (Fig. 4), where they form a continuous surface approximately  $2800 \text{ Å}^2$  in area. The extent and conformation of each CDR are primarily determined by the nature and number of amino acids in the segment, and the variability in sequence and size seen in the CDRs results in a large variation in the topography of the CDR surface. The



Fig. 2. Stereodrawing of the  $\alpha$ -carbon trace of the Fab of the murine antibody, HyHEL-10. The light chain is drawn with thinner lines. The variable domains are on top and the constant domains are at the bottom. The N- and C-termini of the two chains, residues in the switch regions, and the first and last residues of the six CDRs are labeled. The CDR residues are indicated by filled circles.

 Table 3. Symmetry in the quaternary structure of murine and human antigen-binding regions of known three-dimensional structure

|          |             | V <sub>1</sub> -V <sub>H</sub> | symmetry    | $C_L - C_H I$ | symmetry    |                           |
|----------|-------------|--------------------------------|-------------|---------------|-------------|---------------------------|
|          | PDB         | Rotation                       | Translation | Rotation      | Translation | Fab bend                  |
| Antibody | Code        | (degrees)                      | (Å)         | (degrees)     | (Å)         | (degrees)                 |
| (Murine) |             |                                |             |               | <u></u>     |                           |
| J539     | 2FBJ        | 168.7                          | 0.2         | 173.9         | -2.0        | 143.8                     |
| McPC603  | 1MCP        | 173.4                          | 0.1         | 171.8         | -2.8        | 131.3                     |
|          |             | 173.6                          | 0.3         | 171.9         | -2.7        | 131.8 <sup><i>a</i></sup> |
| HyHEL-10 | 3HFM        | 170.6                          | -0.3        | 167.7         | -2.0        | 145.6                     |
| HyHEL-5  | 2HFL        | 171.4                          | 0.1         | 169.1         | -2.0        | 161.7                     |
| R19.9    | 2F19        | 175.2                          | 0.3         | 166.8         | -2.0        | 176.2                     |
|          | 1FAI        | 175.0                          | 0.3         | 167.8         | -1.8        | 176.1                     |
| 4-4-20   | 4FAB        | 175.5                          | -0.3        | 174.3         | 1.6         | 174.9                     |
| BV04-01  | d           | 176.8                          | -0.1        | 170.6         | -1.8        | 173.5 <sup>a</sup>        |
|          | d           | 173.5                          | 0.3         | 172.3         | 1.8         | 172.5                     |
| 36-71    | 6FAB        | 176.2                          | 0.1         | 171.5         | -2.0        | 166.6                     |
| B13I2    | 2IGF        | 172.4                          | 0.1         | 170.6         | -2.0        | 155.8 <sup><i>a</i></sup> |
|          | 1IGF        | 172.5                          | 0.0         | 170.0         | -2.0        | $153.0^{b}$               |
|          |             | 172.7                          | 0.1         | 170.9         | -2.0        | 155.4 <sup>c</sup>        |
| D1.3     | 1FDL        | 166.2                          | 0.7         | 171.1         | -1.9        | 173.0                     |
| Yst9-1   | 1MAM        | 175.1                          | -0.1        | 172.4         | -1.5        | 148.1                     |
| AN02     | 1BAF        | 173.3                          | -0.5        | 167.4         | -2.2        | 153.8                     |
| 17/9     | 1HIN        | 168.9                          | -0.3        | 172.3         | 1.9         | 175.1 <sup>a</sup>        |
|          | 1HIM        | 169.1                          | 0.2         | 171.3         | -1.7        | $172.7^{a,b}$             |
|          |             | 169.5                          | -0.3        | 171.2         | 1.8         | $171.6^{a,c}$             |
|          | IHIL        | 170.3                          | -0.1        | 171.8         | -1.9        | 159.7 <sup>b</sup>        |
|          |             | 168.9                          | 0.2         | 171.7         | 2.0         | 160.5 <sup>c</sup>        |
| 8F5      | 1BBD        | 173.7                          | -0.7        | 171.0         | -2.1        | 127.2                     |
| NC41     | <b>INCA</b> | 177.6                          | 0.4         | 171.2         | 2.1         | 146.6                     |
| (Human)  |             |                                |             |               |             |                           |
| Kol      | 2FB4        | 167.9                          | -0.1        | 170.4         | 3.4         | 165.2                     |
| NEW      | 7FAB        | 164.3                          | -0.5        | 170.4         | -3.8        | 129.9                     |
| Hil      | 8FAB        | 171.2                          | 0.3         | 174.6         | 2.7         | $147.2^{b}$               |
|          |             | 174.8                          | 0.1         | 168.8         | -3.3        | 135.7 <sup>c</sup>        |
| 3D6      | 1DFB        | 166.8                          | 0.2         | 169.5         | -2.1        | 174.9                     |
| POT      | lIGM        | 174.4                          | 0.0         |               |             |                           |

"Liganded form.

<sup>b</sup>For the first Fab in the asymmetric unit of the crystal.

<sup>c</sup>For the second Fab in the asymmetric unit of the crystal.

<sup>d</sup>Kindly provided by Dr Allen B. Edmundson and coworkers.

The rotation and translation parameters which relate  $V_L$  to  $V_H$  and  $C_L$  to  $C_H 1$  were obtained with program ALIGN (G. H. Cohen, NIH) using the  $\alpha$ -carbon positions of residues: 3-7, 11-26, 31-38, 44-48, 60-66, 70-90 and 97-106 in  $V_L$ ; residues: 3-7, 10-25, 32-39, 45-49, 65-71, 77-94 and 102-111 in  $V_H$ ; residues 109-117, 129-142, 144-149, 158-162, 170-186, 192-198 and 204-208 in  $C_L$ ; and residues: 119-127, 139-152, 154-159, 166-170, 177-193, 198-204 and 210-214 in  $C_H 1$ . The numbering convention of Kabat *et al.* (1991) is used for  $V_L$ ,  $V_H$  and  $C_L$ ; Eu numbering (Edelman *et al.*, 1969) is used for  $C_H 1$ . These residues represent the structurally equivalent positions in the homologous domains of J539 Fab (Suh *et al.*, 1986; Bhat, Padlan and Davies, in preparation). The Fab bend is the angle between the rotation axes which relate  $V_L$  to  $V_H$  and  $C_L$  to  $C_H 1$ .

CDR surface is characterized by depressions and protrusions and may contain a deep pocket [for example, in McPC603 (Segal *et al.*, 1974), or cleft for example, in MAb131 (Garcia *et al.*, 1992)], or a protruberance [for example, in HyHEL-10 (Padlan *et al.*, 1989)]. Crystallographic analysis of several antibody-antigen complexes and other studies have repeatedly shown that antigen binding primarily involves this surface. The CDR surface is therefore usually equated with the combining site of the antibody (the paratope).

The six CDRs are disposed (Fig. 4) such that the N-terminal part of CDR1-L and the C-terminal parts of CDR2-L and CDR2-H are farther from the center of the CDR surface, while CDR1-H, CDR3-H, CDR3-L, the C-terminal part of CDR1-L, and the N-terminal parts of CDR2-L and CDR2-H are closer to the center.

|                 |             |         | <sub>H</sub> interac | ctions |      |      | C       | $C_L - C_H 1$ in                 | nteract | ions |      |
|-----------------|-------------|---------|----------------------|--------|------|------|---------|----------------------------------|---------|------|------|
|                 | PDB         | Surface | Buried               |        |      |      | Surface | Buried                           |         |      |      |
| Antibody        | Code        | VL      | V <sub>H</sub>       | vdW    | H.b. | I.p. | CL      | C <sub>H</sub> 1                 | vdW     | H.b. | I.p. |
| (Murine)        |             |         |                      | -      |      |      |         |                                  |         |      |      |
| J539            | 2FBJ        | 773     | 740                  | 190    | 9    | 0    | 858     | 835                              | 147     | 3    | 0    |
| McPC603         | 1MCP        | 874     | 825                  | 170    | 6    | 0    | 765     | 750                              | 120     | 1    | 0    |
|                 |             | 874     | 825                  | 170    | 6    | 0    | 837     | 790                              | 111     | 3    | 0    |
| HyHEL-10        | 3HFM        | 718     | 676                  | 122    | 3    | 0    | 945     | 981                              | 153     | 6    | 1    |
| HyHEL-5         | 2HFL        | 655     | 627                  | 119    | 9    | 1    | 836     | 810                              | 139     | 6    | 1    |
| <b>R</b> 19.9   | 2F19        | 827     | 846                  | 168    | 9    | 0    | 872     | 835                              | 159     | 5    | 0    |
|                 | 1FAI        | 744     | 751                  | 153    | 5    | 0    | 868     | 861                              | 165     | 6    | 0    |
| 4-4-20          | 4FAB        | 670     | 696                  | 119    | 6    | 1    | 864     | 870                              | 131     | 5    | 1    |
| <b>BV</b> 04-01 |             | 702     | 671                  | 105    | 3    | 0    | 913     | 867ª                             | 149     | 7    | 1    |
|                 |             | 662     | 688                  | 123    | 6    | 0    | 958     | 930                              | 182     | 6    | 1    |
| 36-71           | 6FAB        | 726     | 729                  | 131    | 4    | 0    | 1068    | 1056                             | 217     | 17   | 2    |
| B13I2           | 2IGF        | 715     | 682                  | 132    | 8    | 0    | 1045    | 973 <sup>a</sup>                 | 145     | 4    | 1    |
|                 | lIGF        | 756     | 731                  | 163    | 11   | 1    | 876     | 836 <sup>b</sup>                 | 166     | 6    | 0    |
|                 |             | 786     | 752                  | 159    | 7    | 0    | 868     | 911°                             | 161     | 7    | 0    |
| D1.3            | 1FDL        | 732     | 684                  | 195    | 11   | 1    | 866     | 864                              | 161     | 12   | 1    |
| Yst9-1          | 1MAM        | 644     | 626                  | 80     | 3    | 0    | 918     | 837                              | 159     | 4    | 0    |
| AN02            | 1BAF        | 642     | 615                  | 120    | 7    | 0    | 1043    | 1000                             | 188     | 11   | 2    |
| 17/9            | 1HIN        | 730     | 706                  | 137    | 10   | 2    | 788     | 758 <sup>a</sup>                 | 162     | 5    | 0    |
|                 | 1HIM        | 760     | 742                  | 132    | 6    | 1    | 799     | 761 <sup><i>a</i>,<i>b</i></sup> | 151     | 8    | 1    |
|                 |             | 740     | 730                  | 143    | 9    | 1    | 834     | 796 <sup><i>a</i>,<i>c</i></sup> | 169     | 4    | 0    |
|                 | 1HIL        | 757     | 741                  | 166    | 14   | 1    | 788     | 765 <sup>b</sup>                 | 163     | 6    | 1    |
|                 |             | 744     | 744                  | 163    | 11   | 1    | 870     | 809 <sup>c</sup>                 | 172     | 8    | 1    |
| 8F5             | 1BBD        | 665     | 635                  | 140    | 12   | 0    | 906     | 849                              | 161     | 4    | 0    |
| NC41            | <b>INCA</b> | 614     | 631                  | 141    | 5    | 0    | 1074    | 991                              | 191     | 8    | 0    |
| (Human)         |             |         |                      |        |      |      |         |                                  |         |      |      |
| Kol             | 2FB4        | 800     | <b>79</b> 0          | 162    | 4    | 0    | 894     | 816                              | 125     | 9    | 2    |
| NEW             | 7FAB        | 623     | 594                  | 119    | 6    | 0    | 709     | 648                              | 98      | 6    | 1    |
| Hil             | 8FAB        | 583     | 592                  | 132    | 9    | 1    | 676     | 623 <sup>b</sup>                 | 96      | 4    | 0    |
|                 |             | 714     | 694                  | 153    | 6    | 0    | 829     | 755°                             | 129     | 9    | 1    |
| 3D6             | 1DFB        | 716     | 683                  | 133    | 2    | 1    | 841     | 888                              | 116     | 6    | 0    |
| POT             | 1IGM        | 687     | 687                  | 130    | 9    | 1    |         | —                                |         |      |      |

Table 4.  $V_L - V_H$  and  $C_L - C_H l$  interactions in murine and human antigen-binding regions of known three-dimensional structure

<sup>a</sup>Liganded form.

<sup>b</sup>First Fab in the entry.

'Second Fab in the entry.

Two atoms are said to be in van der Waals' contact (vdW) if the distance between them is at most the sum of their van der Waals' radii plus 0.5 Å. Polar atoms are said to be hydrogen-bonded (H.b.) if the distance between them is at most 2.90 Å (taken to be the standard hydrogen-bond distance) plus 0.5 Å. Oppositely-charged atoms are said to form an ion pair (I.p.) if the distance between them is at most 2.85 Å (taken to be the standard ion-pair distance) plus 0.5. An average error in the atomic positions of 0.35 Å is assumed for all the structures included in the analysis; the assumed error in the interatomic distances is then 0.5 Å [=0.35 × sqrt(2.0)]. Surface areas were computed using program MS of Connolly (1983); a probe radius of 1.7 Å was used and four points per square Ångstrom of surface area were computed.

The nonhypervariable or framework regions, by and large, show conserved amino acid substitutions and very similar three-dimensional structures. The different antibody combining sites, therefore, can be pictured as being constructed with CDRs of varied shapes and sizes, which are grafted onto a scaffolding of basically conserved structure.

The contact between  $V_L$  and  $V_H$  involves both framework and CDR residues and features framework-framework, framework-CDR and CDR-CDR interactions. The involvement of CDR residues in the  $V_L-V_H$  contact is significant, ranging from 26 to 57% of all atomic interactions in the structures analysed (Table 5). This involvement undoubtedly contributes to the variation seen in the quaternary association of the variable domains. The contribution to the contact from the individual CDRs is not the same (Table 6); in  $V_L$ , only CDR3-L interacts with all the CDRs of the heavy chain (on average, 5% of its contact is with CDR1-H, 28% is with CDR2-H and 67% is with CDR3-H); in  $V_H$ ,



Fig. 3. Stereodrawings of the  $\alpha$ -carbon trace of the Fabs of (a) 8F5 (PDB Entry: 1BBD), which is the most bent (Fab bend = 127.2°), and (b) R19.9 (PDB Entry: 2F19), which is almost straight (Fab bend = 176.2°). In these drawings, the Fabs are oriented such that their C<sub>L</sub>-C<sub>H</sub> 1 modules are maximally superposed. The light chains are drawn with thinner lines and the heavy chains with thicker lines. The variable domains are on top and the constant domains are at the bottom.

only CDR3-H interacts with all the CDRs of the light chain (on average, 22% of its contact is with CDR1-L, 18% is with CDR2-L, and 60% is with CDR3-L). The framework residues of  $V_L$  which interact with the CDRs in the heavy chain are mostly from FR2-L and FR4-L, and occasionally from FR1-L; the framework residues of  $V_H$  which interact with the CDRs in the light chain are exclusively from FR2-H and, in almost all cases, the only residue that is involved is that at position 47 (usually a Trp). Details of the  $V_L-V_H$  contacts in Kol and J539 are presented in Table 7 and Fig. 5. The CDR and framework residues, which are involved in the  $V_L-V_H$  interaction in the various antigen-binding regions of known three-dimensional structure, are given in Table 8.

Intradomain framework-CDR interactions can influence the conformation of the CDRs. Indeed, canonical



Fig. 4. Stereodrawing of the  $\alpha$ -carbon trace of the Fv of antibody HyHEL-10 viewed end on. The figure is rotated 90° relative to Fig. 2. The V<sub>L</sub> is on the left (thinner lines). The CDR residues are indicated by filled circles and their ends are labeled.

structures have been observed for most CDRs and those structures appear to be determined by the nature of a small number of framework residues that interact with the CDRs (Chothia and Lesk, 1987; Chothia et al., 1989; Tramontano et al., 1990). The framework, therefore, does not simply provide a foundation for the

Table 5. Involvement of framework (FRM) and complementarity-determining (CDR) regions in the  $V_L - V_H$  interactions in murine and human antigen-binding regions of known three-dimensional structure

|                |                   | · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · | Number of inter        | ratomic contacts       | between:            |       |
|----------------|-------------------|---------------------------------------|------------------------|------------------------|---------------------|-------|
|                | PDB               | $V_{\rm L}$ and $V_{\rm H}$           | V <sub>1</sub> FRM and | V <sub>u</sub> FRM and | V, CDRs and         |       |
| Antibody       | Code              | FRMs                                  | V <sub>H</sub> CDRs    | "V <sub>L</sub> CDRs   | V <sub>H</sub> CDRs | Total |
| (Murine)       |                   |                                       |                        |                        |                     |       |
| J539           | 2FBJ              | 65                                    | 36                     | 24                     | 65                  | 190   |
| McPC603        | 1MCP              | 56                                    | 27                     | 27                     | 60                  | 170   |
|                |                   | 56                                    | 27                     | 27                     | 60                  | 170   |
| HyHEL-10       | 3HFM              | 51                                    | 8                      | 17                     | 46                  | 122   |
| HyHEL-5        | 2HFL              | 65                                    | 25                     | 12                     | 17                  | 119   |
| R19.9          | 2F19              | 50                                    | 27                     | 17                     | 74                  | 168   |
|                | 1FAI              | 48                                    | 40                     | 15                     | 50                  | 153   |
| 4-4-20         | 4FAB              | 40                                    | 30                     | 22                     | 27                  | 119   |
| <b>BV04-01</b> | а                 | 55                                    | 14                     | 8                      | 28                  | 105   |
|                |                   | 49                                    | 32                     | 15                     | 27                  | 123   |
| 36-71          | 6FAB              | 53                                    | 31                     | 21                     | 26                  | 131   |
| B13I2          | 2IGF              | 41                                    | 25                     | 11                     | 55                  | 132   |
|                | $1IGF^{b}$        | 68                                    | 26                     | 11                     | 58                  | 163   |
|                | с                 | 66                                    | 30                     | 10                     | 53                  | 159   |
| D1.3           | 1FDL              | 68                                    | 36                     | 21                     | 70                  | 195   |
| YST9-1         | 1MAM              | 47                                    | 11                     | 13                     | 9                   | 80    |
| AN02           | 1BAF              | 53                                    | 19                     | 17                     | 31                  | 120   |
| 17/9           | 1HIN              | 54                                    | 26                     | 18                     | 39                  | 137   |
|                | 1HIM <sup>b</sup> | 47                                    | 29                     | 17                     | 39                  | 132   |
|                | С                 | 50                                    | 24                     | 17                     | 52                  | 143   |
|                | $1 HIL^{b}$       | 57                                    | 36                     | 19                     | 54                  | 166   |
|                | c                 | 57                                    | 33                     | 15                     | 58                  | 163   |
| 8F5            | 1BBD              | 66                                    | 21                     | 22                     | 31                  | 140   |
| NC41           | 1NCA              | 58                                    | 17                     | 15                     | 51                  | 141   |
| (Human)        |                   |                                       |                        |                        |                     |       |
| Kol            | 2FB4              | 74                                    | 23                     | 21                     | 44                  | 162   |
| NEW            | 7FAB              | 51                                    | 14                     | 22                     | 32                  | 119   |
| Hil            | 8FAB <sup>b</sup> | 59                                    | 23                     | 12                     | 38                  | 132   |
|                | с                 | 55                                    | 24                     | 10                     | 64                  | 153   |
| 3D6            | 1DFB              | 49                                    | 14                     | 16                     | 54                  | 133   |
| POT            | 1IGM              | 55                                    | 28                     | 11                     | 36                  | 130   |

<sup>a</sup>Liganded form.

<sup>b</sup>For the first Fab in the asymmetric unit of the crystal. <sup>c</sup>For the second Fab in the asymmetric unit of the crystal. See footnote to Table 4 for the definition of contacts.

|          | (      | DRI-L wit | h:     | In <sup>.</sup> | teratomic co<br>CDR2-L with | ntacts<br>h: | CDR3-L with: |        |        |  |
|----------|--------|-----------|--------|-----------------|-----------------------------|--------------|--------------|--------|--------|--|
| Antibody | CDR1-H | CDR2-H    | CDR3-H | CDR1-H          | CDR2-H                      | CDR3-H       | CDR1-H       | CDR2-H | CDR3-H |  |
| J539     | 0      | 0         | 23     | 0               | 0                           | 7            | 1            | 12     | 22     |  |
| McPC603  | 0      | 0         | 15     | 0               | 0                           | 2            | 13           | 4      | 26     |  |
| HyHEL-10 | 0      | 0         | 5      | 0               | 0                           | 0            | 0            | 33     | 8      |  |
| HyHEL-5  | 0      | 0         | 0      | 0               | 0                           | 0            | 4            | 9      | 0      |  |
| R19.9    | 0      | 0         | 5      | 0               | 0                           | 6            | 1            | 10     | 52     |  |
| 4-4-20   | 0      | 0         | 9      | 0               | 0                           | 17           | 1            | 0      | 0      |  |
| BV04-01  | 0      | 0         | 0      | 0               | 0                           | 9            | 0            | 0      | 19     |  |
| 36-71    | 0      | 0         | 11     | 0               | 0                           | 6            | 0            | 3      | 6      |  |
| B13I2    | 0      | 0         | 36     | 0               | 0                           | 3            | 0            | 0      | 16     |  |
| D1.3     | 0      | 0         | 5      | 0               | 0                           | 0            | 1            | 19     | 45     |  |
| Yst9-1   | 0      | 0         | 0      | 0               | 0                           | 4            | 0            | 3      | 2      |  |
| AN02     | 0      | 0         | 2      | 0               | 0                           | 0            | 0            | 26     | 3      |  |
| 17/9     | 0      | 0         | 9      | 0               | 0                           | 10           | 0            | 4      | 16     |  |
| 8F5      | 0      | 0         | 0      | 0               | 0                           | 16           | 1            | 14     | 0      |  |
| NC41     | 0      | 0         | 3      | 0               | 0                           | 6            | 0            | 0      | 42     |  |
| Kol      | 0      | 0         | 5      | 0               | 0                           | 0            | 3            | 8      | 28     |  |
| NEW      | 0      | 0         | 4      |                 |                             |              | 3            | 12     | 13     |  |
| Hil      | 0      | 0         | 10     | 0               | 0                           | 1            | 0            | 1      | 26     |  |
| 3D6      | 0      | 0         | 2      | 0               | 0                           | 18           | 1            | 0      | 33     |  |
| РОТ      | 0      | 0         | 0      | 0               | 0                           | 7            | 0            | 2      | 27     |  |
| Totals   | 0      | 0         | 144    | 0               | 0                           | 112          | 29           | 160    | 384    |  |

Table 6. van der Waals' contacts among the CDRs of murine and human antigen-binding regions of known three-dimensional structure

The coordinates used in the computations were for the liganded forms of McPC603, B1312, BV04-01 and 17/9 (PDB Entry: 1HIM, first Fab in the entry); and (here and in subsequent calculations) those in PDB Entry 2F19 for R19.9, the first Fab in PDB Entry 8FAB for Hil, and those in PDB Entry 1NCA for NC41. The 7 residue deletion around the CDR2-L of NEW  $V_L$  is interpreted here as a deletion of all of CDR2-L in view of the minigene hypothesis of Kabat *et al.* (1978); this region in NEW has unusual amino acids and a different structure compared to the other  $V_L$ s. See footnote to Table 4 for the definition of contacts.

construction of the combining site; small variations in the architecture of the framework can affect the topography of the CDR surface. Crystallographic analysis of antibody structures, with and without bound ligand, has shown that, in some cases, the combining site structure could change on

| V <sub>H</sub> | T32 | N34            | Y36             | Q38            | G41 | M42 | A43 | P44        | L46 | V <sub>L</sub><br>Y49 | Y87 | W91 | V93 | N95a | A95b | Y96 | F98 | Totals |
|----------------|-----|----------------|-----------------|----------------|-----|-----|-----|------------|-----|-----------------------|-----|-----|-----|------|------|-----|-----|--------|
| ¥35            |     |                |                 |                |     |     |     |            |     |                       |     |     |     |      |      | 3   |     | 3      |
| V37            |     |                |                 |                |     |     |     |            |     |                       |     |     |     |      |      |     | 4   | 4      |
| Q39            |     |                |                 | 6 <sup>h</sup> | 2   |     |     |            |     |                       | 1   |     |     |      |      |     |     | 9      |
| G44            |     |                |                 |                |     |     |     |            |     |                       | 4   |     |     |      |      |     |     | 4      |
| L45            |     |                |                 | 2              |     |     |     | 2          |     |                       | 7   |     |     |      |      |     | 9   | 20     |
| W47            |     |                |                 |                |     |     |     |            |     |                       |     |     |     | 1    | 6    | 14  | 5   | 26     |
| 150            |     |                |                 |                |     |     |     |            |     |                       |     | 3   |     |      |      |     |     | 3      |
| H58            |     |                |                 |                |     |     |     |            |     |                       |     |     |     | 5    |      |     |     | 5      |
| F91            |     |                |                 |                | 2   | 3   | 2   |            |     |                       |     |     |     |      |      |     |     | 7      |
| C100a          |     |                |                 |                |     |     |     |            |     |                       |     | 7   |     |      |      |     |     | 7      |
| S100b          |     |                |                 |                |     |     |     |            |     |                       |     | 2   |     |      |      |     |     | 2      |
| S100c          |     |                |                 |                |     |     |     |            |     |                       |     | ,   | 2   |      |      | -   |     | 2      |
| C100f          | 1   | - h            |                 |                |     |     |     |            |     |                       |     | 6   |     |      |      | 2   |     | 9      |
| F100g          |     | 3 <sup>n</sup> |                 |                |     |     |     |            |     | 10                    |     |     |     |      |      |     |     | 13     |
| G100h          |     | 1              | roh             |                |     |     |     |            |     |                       |     |     |     |      |      | 3   |     | 4      |
| P1001          |     |                | 10 <sup>n</sup> |                |     |     |     |            | -   |                       |     |     |     |      |      | 6   |     | 16     |
| D101           |     |                | -               |                |     |     |     |            | 3   |                       |     |     |     |      |      |     | •   | 3      |
| W103           |     |                | 5               |                |     |     | 1   | 15         |     |                       |     |     |     |      |      |     | 2   | 23     |
| G104           |     |                |                 |                |     |     | 2   | . <u> </u> |     |                       |     |     |     |      |      |     |     | 2      |
| Totals         | 1   | 4              | 15              | 8              | 4   | 3   | 5   | 17         | 3   | 10                    | 12  | 18  | 2   | 6    | 6    | 28  | 20  | 162    |

Table 7a.  $V_L - V_H$  contacts in the human (IgG1, $\lambda$ ) Kol (PDB Entry: 2FB4)

Table 7b.  $V_L - V_H$  contacts in the murine (IgA, $\kappa$ ) J539 (PDB Entry: 2FBJ)

|                |             |                |                |                |                |     |     |     |     | V <sub>1</sub> |                |                |     |                |     |     |     |     |        |
|----------------|-------------|----------------|----------------|----------------|----------------|-----|-----|-----|-----|----------------|----------------|----------------|-----|----------------|-----|-----|-----|-----|--------|
| V <sub>H</sub> | <b>S</b> 32 | H34            | Y36            | Q38            | S43            | P44 | P46 | Y49 | E50 | A55            | <b>Y</b> 87    | Q89            | W91 | Y93            | P94 | L95 | 196 | F98 | Totals |
| W33            |             |                |                |                |                |     |     |     |     |                |                |                |     | 1              |     |     |     |     | 1      |
| V37            |             |                |                |                |                |     |     |     |     |                |                |                |     |                |     |     |     | 4   | 4      |
| Q39            |             |                |                | 9 <sup>h</sup> |                |     |     |     |     |                | 1 <sup>h</sup> |                |     |                |     |     |     |     | 10     |
| K43            |             |                |                |                |                |     |     |     |     |                | 1              |                |     |                |     |     |     |     | 1      |
| G44            |             |                |                |                |                |     |     |     |     |                | 3              |                |     |                |     |     |     |     | 3      |
| L45            |             |                |                |                |                | 3   |     |     |     |                | 5              |                |     |                |     |     |     | 6   | 14     |
| W47            |             |                |                |                |                |     |     |     |     |                |                |                |     |                | 2   | 1   | 21  | 1   | 24     |
| E50            |             |                |                |                |                |     |     |     |     |                |                |                |     | 1              |     |     |     |     | 1      |
| T56            |             |                |                |                |                |     |     |     |     |                |                |                |     | 1              |     |     |     |     | 1      |
| N58            |             |                |                |                |                |     |     |     |     |                |                |                |     | 5 <sup>h</sup> | 4   |     |     |     | 9      |
| P61            |             |                |                |                |                |     |     |     |     |                |                |                |     |                |     | 1   |     |     | 1      |
| Y91            |             |                |                | 1              | 4              | 3   |     |     |     |                |                |                |     |                |     |     |     |     | 8      |
| L95            |             |                |                |                |                |     |     |     |     |                |                |                |     |                |     |     | 1   |     | 1      |
| Y97            |             |                |                |                |                |     |     |     | 1   |                |                |                |     |                |     |     |     |     | 1      |
| Y98            | 4           | 6 <sup>h</sup> |                |                |                |     |     |     | 5   |                |                |                | 11  |                |     |     |     |     | 26     |
| G99            |             | 3              |                |                |                |     |     |     |     |                |                | 3 <sup>h</sup> | 4   |                |     |     | 2   |     | 12     |
| Y100           |             | 10             | 5              |                |                |     | 3   | 16  |     | 1              |                |                |     |                |     |     |     |     | 35     |
| N100a          |             |                | 6 <sup>h</sup> |                |                |     | 2   |     |     |                |                | 1              |     |                |     |     |     | 1   | 10     |
| A101           |             |                |                |                |                |     | 3   |     |     |                |                |                |     |                |     |     |     |     | 3      |
| W103           |             |                | 3              |                |                | 6   | 3   |     |     |                |                |                |     |                |     |     |     | 1   | 13     |
| G104           |             |                |                |                | 3 <sup>h</sup> |     |     |     |     |                |                |                |     |                |     |     |     |     | 3      |
| Q105           |             |                |                |                | 8 <sup>h</sup> |     |     |     |     |                |                |                |     |                |     |     |     |     | 8      |
| Totals         | 4           | 19             | 14             | 10             | 15             | 12  | 11  | 16  | 6   | 1              | 10             | 4              | 15  | 8              | 6   | 2   | 24  | 13  | 190    |

The residues on the horizontal lines are from the  $V_L$  and those along the vertical are from the  $V_H$ . In these matrices of contacts, the element c(i, j) represents the number of interacting atom pairs, one from residue *i* and the other from residue *j*. The superscript <sup>h</sup> that is found after some matrix elements signifies that the contact involves at least one hydrogen bond. See footnote to Table 4 for the definition of contacts.



Fig. 5. Stereodrawings of the  $\alpha$ -carbon trace of the Fvs of Kol (a) and of J539 (b) showing the residues which are in the V<sub>L</sub>-V<sub>H</sub> contact. The V<sub>L</sub>s are drawn with thinner lines on the left. The side chains of the residues involved in the contact are shown in full.

| Table 8a. V <sub>1</sub> | residues involved in the $V_L \sim V_H$ conta | ct in murine and human | antigen-binding | regions of known | three-dimensional |
|--------------------------|---|------------------------|-----------------|------------------|-------------------|
|                          |   | structure              |                 |                  |                   |

|          |                    |            |  |                |           |              |                |                |             | •             |
|----------|--------------------|------------|--|----------------|-----------|--------------|----------------|----------------|-------------|---------------|
|          |                    |            | CDR1                                   |                | CDR2      |              |                |                | CDR3        |               |
|          | 10                 | 20         | 27abcdef 30                            | 40             | 50        | 60           | 70             | 80             | 95ab        | 100           |
| WWHEL-10 | DIVUTOSPATI SVTD   | CNSVSLSC   | PASOSTONNIU                            |                | VACOSTS   | CIUSPESCE    | SCONFTIST      | NEVETEDECHVEC  | 005N5WDYT   | FOCOTRIETS    |
| nynes is | *                  | 040+0100   | torog Stower                           | * * ** *       | * *       | 312 511 5650 | 3561011151     | NOVELEDFORTIC. | 22383#F==11 | **            |
| HyHEL-5  | DIVLTQSPAIMSASP    | GEKVIMIC   | SASSSVNYMY                             | WYQOKSGTSPKRWI | DISKLAS   | GVPVRFSGSG   | SSGTSYSLTI     | SSMETEDAAEYYC  | OOWGRNPT    | FGGGTKLEIK    |
| •        | *                  |            | *                                      | ** ***         |           |              |                | •              | * * ** *    | * *           |
| D1.3     | DIONTOSPASLSASV    | GETVILIC   | RASGNIHNYLA                            | WYQCKQGKSPQLLV | YTTTLAD   | GVPSRFSGS    | GSGTQYSLKI     | NSLOPEDFGSYYC  | QHFWSTPRT   | FGGGTKLEIK    |
|          |                    |            | * *** *                                | ** ** * *      | *         |              |                | *              | * * ** *    | ***           |
| McPC603  | DIVMTQSPSSLSVSA    | GERVTMSC   | KSSQSLINSGNQKNFLA                      | WYQQKPGQPPKLLI | GASTRES   | GVPDRFTGSC   | SSGTDFTLTI     | SSVQAEDLAVYYC  | QNDHSYPLT   | FGAGTKLEIK    |
|          |                    |            | * *                                    | ** ** *        | * *       |              |                | *              | * * *** *   | •             |
| J539     | EIVLTQSPAITAASL    | GQKVTITC   | SASSSVSSLH                             | WYQQKSGTSPKPWI | EISKLAS   | GVPARFSGS    | SSGTSYSLTI     | NTMEAEDAAIYYC  | QQWTYPLIT   | FGAGTKLELK    |
|          | DIOUTOTOOCICLO     | 0000000000 | * *                                    | *****          | · • •     | OUT OD BOOOD | an come vez ma | ANI DUPOTATUPO | * * * * * * | * *           |
| R19.9    | DIGWIGITSSISASE    | GDRVIISC   | RASQDISNILN                            | WIQUAPDGIVALLI | 115RLH5   | GVPSRFSGSG   | 3201012211     | SNLEREDIATIFC  | QQGSTLPRI   | FGGGIRLEIK    |
| 4-4-20   | DV//MTOTOL CLDUST  | COONSTEE   | DESOCIANE.OCNEVID                      | WYTOKECOSEKUTT | KVCNDDS   | CUBDDESCO    | SCEDETIKI      | COUPARDICUMEC  | COSTUUDWT   | FCCCTRIFIE    |
| 4-4-20   | DAAULALL Pape 42D  | anāus tac  | ************************************** | * * **** *     |           | GVEDRE 3651  | JOGIDETING     | SKVENDDIGVIIC  | * * *       | * *           |
| AN02     | QIVLTOSPAIMSASP    | GEKVIMIC   | SASSSVYYMY                             | WYOOKPGSSPRLLI | DISNLAS   | GVPVRFSGS    | GSGTSYSLTI     | SRMEAEDAATYYC  | QQWSSYPP-IT | FGVGTKLELK    |
|          |                    |            | * *                                    | ** ***         |           |              |                | *              | * ** *      | *             |
| 36-71    | DIOMTOIPSSLSASL    | GDRVS(SC   | RASQDINNFLN                            | WYQQKPDGTIKLLI | FISRSQS   | GVPSRFSGS    | GSGTDYSLTI     | SNLEQEDIATYFC  | QQGNALPRT   | FGGGTKLEIK    |
|          |                    |            | * **                                   | * * ** *       | • •       |              |                | •              | • • • •     | •             |
| B13I2    | DVLMTQTPLSLPVSL    | GDOASISC   | RSNQTILLS-DGDTYLE                      | WYLQKPGQSPKLLI | KVSNRFS   | GVPDRFSGS    | GSGTDFTLKI     | SRVEAEDLGVYYC  | FQGSHVPPT   | FGGGTKLEIK    |
|          |                    |            |  | ** ***         | *         |              |                | *              | ** *        | **            |
| Yst9-1   | DIQMTQTTSSLSASL    | GORVIISC   | RASQDIYNYLN                            | WYQQKPUGTVKULI | TSRLHS    | GVPSRESGS    | SETDYSLII      | SNINGEDMATTIC  | QQGNTLPFT   | FGSGTRLEIK    |
| 8004-01  | DVVMTOTOT SI SVST  | COONSISC   | RSSOCTARS-NONTYLE                      | WYLOKPOOSPHILT | KUSNRES   | OVERRESISS   | SCHOFT! KT     | SEVENEDLOVYEC  | SOSTRVP-+LT | FGAGTRIFLE    |
| 5004 01  | Divitigit Dobt +00 | 0000100    | * * *                                  | * * * ** *     | • •       | 011010 0000  | 0001011000     | *              | * * ** *    | *             |
| 17/9     | DIVMTOSPSSLTVTA    | GEKVTMSC   | TSSOSLENSGKOKNYLT                      | WYOOKPGOPPKVLI | WASTRES   | GVPDRFTGS    | SSGTDFTLTI     | SSVOAEDLAVYYC  | ONDYSNPLT   | FGGGTKLELK    |
|          |                    |            |  | * * * * *      |           |              |                | •              | ** *        | *             |
| 8F5      | DIVMTQSPSSLTVTT    | GEKVTMTC   | KSSQSLLNSRTQKNYLT                      | WYQQKPGQSPKLLI | WASTRES   | GVPDRFTGS    | GSGTDFTLSI     | SGVQAEDLAVYYC  | QNNYNYPLT   | FGAGTKLELK    |
|          |                    |            | •                                      | ** ***         | * **      |              |                | *              | * * * *     | *             |
| NC41     | DIVMTOSPKFMSTSV    | GDRVTITC   | KASQDVSTAVV                            | WYQQKPGQSPKLLI | WASTRHI   | GVPDRFAGS    | GSGTDYTLTI     | SSVQAEDLALYYC  | QQHYSPPWT   | FGGGTKLEIK    |
|          |                    |            |  |                |           |              |                |                |             |               |
|          | DIMODDO NOVOD      | COTABIEC   | CARS                                   | WYOOKBORNDUMUT | KETOBES   | CIDOPRESS    | rsentVrtst     | SCVOAFDEADYYC  | OAWDNSA-~ST | FOGGTKLTVLG   |
| HIL      | FFIGL62-APASh      | QUARTIC    | SANKLENQIAI                            | * * **** * 1   | , KDIQAES | 011 Aut 202  | 1501171013     | *              | * * ***     | •             |
| Kol      | OSVITOPPS-ASGTP    | GORV/TISC  | SGTSSNIGSSTVN                          | WYOOLPGMAPKLLT | RDAMRPS   | GVPDRFSGSI   | KSGASASLAI     | GGLQSEDETDYYC  | AAWDVSLNAYV | FGTGTKVTVLG   |
|          | for practice woods |            | *                                      | * * *** *      |           |              |                | •              | * ** *      | ٠             |
| NEW      | ASVLTQPPS-VSGAP    | GORVTISC   | TGSSSNI-~-GAGHNVK                      | WYQQLPGTAPKLLI |           | HNNARFSVS    | KSGTSATLAI     | TGLQAEDEADYYC  | QSYDRSLRV   | FGGGTKLTVLR   |
|          |                    |            | •                                      |                | • •       |              |                | *              | * * * *     | •             |
| 3D6      | DIQMTQSPSTLSASV    | GDRVTITC   | RASQ~SISRWLA                           | WYQQKPGKVPKLLI | ( KASSLES | GVPSRFSGS    | GSGTEFTLTI     | SSLOPDDFATYYC  | QQYNSYS     | FGPGTKVDIK    |
|          |                    |            |  | * * ** *       | *         |              |                | *              | * * *** *   | R CODORNUD IN |
| POT      | DIOMTOSPSSLSASV    | GDRVTITC   | QASQDISNYLA                            | WYQQKPGKAPELRI | DASNLET   | GVPSRFSGS    | GSGTDFTFTI     | SSLQPEDIATYYC  | QQYQNLPLT   | FGPGTKVDIK    |
|          |                    |            |  |                |           |              |                |                |             |               |

Table 8b.  $V_{\rm H}$  residues involved in the  $V_{\rm L}$ - $V_{\rm H}$  contact in murine and human antigen-binding regions of known three-dimensional structure

|          |                 |             |         | CDR1          |            |                | CDR             | 2                   |   |               |                 | CDR3                         |                     |
|----------|-----------------|-------------|---------|---------------|------------|----------------|-----------------|---------------------|---|---------------|-----------------|------------------------------|---------------------|
|          | 10              | 20          | 30      |               | 40         |                | 52abc           | 60<br>****          | 70                                      | 82abc         | 90<br>*         | 100abcdefghi<br>***          | 110<br>**           |
| HyHEL-10 | DVQLQESGPSLVKP  | SQTLSLTCSV  | IGDSIT  | SDYWS-        | WIRKFPGNRI | EYMG           | rvsysgs         | TYYNPSLKS           | RISITRDTSKNC                            | YYLDLNSVTTE   | DTATYYCAN       | WDGD:                        | WGOGTLVTVSA         |
| HyHEL-∋  | 2 VQLQQSGAELMKP | GASVKISCKA  | SGYTFS  | DYWIE-        | WVKQRPCHGI | EWIC N         | EILPGSGS        | TNYHERFKG           | KATFTADTSSSI                            | AYMOLNSLTSE   | DSGVYYCLH       | GNYDFDC                      | WGQGTTLTV55         |
| D1.3     | QVQLKESGPGLVAP  | SQSLSITCTV  | SGFSLT  | *<br>GYGVN-   | WVROPPGKGI | EWLG           | MIWGDGN         | TDYNSALKS           | RLSISKDNSKSC                            | VFLKMNSLHT    | DTARYYCAR       | ERDYRLD                      | WGQGTTLTVSS         |
| McPC 603 | EVKLVESOGGLVOP  | GSLRLSCAT   | SGFTFS  | * *<br>DFYME- | WVROPPGKRI | EWIA I         | *<br>ASRNKGNKYT | TEYSASVKG           | RFIVSRDTSQSI                            | LYLOMNALRAE   | DTAIYYCAR       | NYYGSTWYFD                   | WGAGTTVTVSS         |
| .1539    | EVKLLESGGGLVOP  | GGSLKLSCAA  | SGFDFS  | *<br>KYWAMS-  | WVRQAPGKGI | EWIG 1         | *<br>EIHPDSGT   | INYTPSLKD           | KFIISRDNAKNS                            | LYLOMSKVRS    | DTALYYCAR       | LHYYGYNA                     | WGQGTLVTVSA         |
|          |                 |             | CONDER  | *             | * * **     | -              | YIND - CKGY     | * *<br>TSYNEKEKG    | KTTLTVDRSSS1                            | TAYMOLRSLTS   | *<br>EDAAVYFCAR | * ****** *<br>SFYGGSDLAVYYFD | ***<br>WGQGTTLTVSS  |
| R19.9    | QVQLQQSGAELVRA  | 622AULISCUA | 501171  | ¥             | ** 1       | * *            |                 |                     | 000000000000000000000000000000000000000 |               | *               | ***                          |                     |
| 4-4-20   | EVKIDETGGGLVOP  | GRPMKLSCVA  | SGETES  | DYNN-         | WVRQSPEKGI | LEWVA I<br>* * | OIRNKPYNYB      | TYYSDSVKG           | RETISRODSKS                             | 2 Y LUMINICKY | *               | ***                          | ***                 |
| AN02     | DVQLQESGPGLVKP  | SQSQSLTCTV  | TGYSIT  | SDYAWN        | WIROFPONK  | LEWMG          | YMSYSGS         | TRYNPSLRS           | RISITRDTSKNO                            | DFFLQLKSVTT   | EDTATYFCAR      | GWPLA'                       | WGQGTQVSVSE         |
| 36-71    | EVQLQQSGVELVRA  | GSSVKMSCKA  | SGYTFT  | SNG1N-        | WVKQRPGQG  | LEWIG          | YNN?GNG)        | (IAYNEKFKG          | KTTLTVDKSSS:                            | TAYMOLRSLIS   | EDSAVYFCAR      | SEYYGGSYKFD                  | Y WGQGTTLTVSS<br>** |
| B1312    | EVQLVESGGDLVK   | GGSLKLSCAA  | SGFTFS  | RCAM5-        | WVRQTPEKR  | LEWVA          | GISSGGS)        | TFYPDTVKG           | RFIISRNNARN                             | ILSLQMSSLRSI  | EDTAIYYCTR<br>* | YSSDPFYFD                    | Y WGQGTTLTVSS       |
| Yst 9-1  | EVKLVESGGGLVQI  | GGSLRLSCAI  | SGFTFT  | DYYMS-        | WVRQPPGKA  | LEWLG          | FIRNKADGY       | TEYSASVKG           | RFTISRDNSQS                             | ILYLOMNTLRA   | EDSATYYCTR<br>* | DPYGPAA                      | Y WGQGTLVTVSA       |
| BV04-01  | EVOPVETGGGLVQ   | KGSLKLSCAA  | SGFSFN  | TNAMN-        | WVRQAPGKG  | LEWVA          | RIRSKSNNYJ      | ATYYADSVKD<br>★ ★   | RETISEDDSON                             | MLYLQMNNLKTI  | EDTAMYYCVR<br>* | DQTGTAWFA                    | WGQGTLVIVSA         |
| 17/9     | EVQLVESGGDLVK   | GGSLKLSCA   | SGFSFS  | SYGMS-        | WVROTPDKR  | LEWVA          | TISNGGG'        | TYYPDSVKG           | RFTISRDNAKN'                            | TLYLOMSSLKS   | EDSAMYYCAR      | RERYDENGEA                   | Y WGQGTLVTVSA<br>** |
| 8F5      | EVOLOOSGAELVRI  | PGASVKLSCTT | SGFNIK  | DIYIH-        | WVKORPEOG  | LEWIG          | RLDP ANG        | YT <b>KYDPKFQ</b> G | KATITVDTSSN                             | TAYLHLSSLTS   | EDTAVYYCDG<br>* | YYSYYDMD                     | Y WGPGTSVIVSS       |
| NC41     | QIQLVQSGPELKK   | PGETVKISCK  | SGYTFT  | NYGMN-        | WVKQAPGKG  | LEWMG          | WINTNTG         | EP TYGEEFKG         | RFAFSLETSAS                             | TANLQINNLKN   | edkatefcar      | GEDNFGSLSD                   | Y WGQGTTLTVSS       |
|          |                 |             |         |               | • • •      | ***            |                 | *                   |   |               | *               | ** ****                      | **                  |
| Hil      | AVKLVQAGGGVVQ   | PGRSLRLSC I | SGFTFS  | NYGMH-        | WVRQAPGKG  | LEWVA          | VIWYNGS         | RTYYGDSVKG          | RFTISRDNSKR                             | TLYMOMNSLRT   | EDTAVYYCAR<br>* | DPDILTAFSFD                  | Y WGQGVLVTVSS<br>** |
| Kol      | EVQLVQSGGGVVQ   | PGRSLRLSCSS | SGFIFS  | SYAMY-<br>*   | WVRQAPGKG  | LEWVA          | II₩DDGS<br>*    | DOHYADSVKG          | RFTISRNDSKN                             | TLFLOMDSLRP   | EDTGVYFCAR      | DGGHGFCSSASCFGPD             | Y WGQGTPVTVSS<br>** |
| NEW      | AVQLEQSGPGLVR   | PSQTLSLTCT  | /SGTSFD | DYYWT-        | WVRQPPGRG  | LEWIG          | YVFYTG          | TTLLDPSLRG          | RVIMLVNISKN                             | QFSLRLSSVTA   | ADTAVYYCAR<br>* | NLIAGGID                     | V WGQGSLVTVSS       |
| 3D6      | EVQLVESGGGLVQ   | PGRSLRLSCA  | ASGETEN | DYAMH-        | WVRQAPGKG  | LEWVS          | GISWDSS         | SIGYADSVKG<br>*     | RETISRONAKN                             | SLYLOMNSI.RA  | EDMALYYCVK<br>* | GRDYYDSGGYFTVAFD             | I WGQGTMVTVSS       |
| POT      | EVHLLESGGNLVQ   | PGGSLRLSCA  | ASGETEN | IFVMS-        | WVRQAPGKG  | LEWVS          | GVFGSGG         | NTDYADAVKG          | RFTITRDNSKN                             | TLYLQMNSLRA   | EDTAIYYCAK      | HRVSYVLTGFD                  | S WGQGTLVTVSS       |

The residues which contact the opposite domain are indicated by (\*). See footnote to Table 4 for the definition of contacts.

binding, in the manner of an "induced fit" {Edmundson et al., 1974, 1987; Colman, 1988; Bhat et al., 1990; Herron et al., 1991; Rini et al., 1992; [reviewed by Davies and Padlan (1992)]}. The conformation of the individual CDRs, especially the longer ones, could change, as could the mode of quarternary association of the variable domains (Colman et al., 1987; Colman, 1988; Bhat et al., 1990; Herron et al., 1991; Rini et al., 1992). These results suggest that the combining site structure is not rigid, rather, it is plastic and may assume different conformations depending on circumstance.

### The $C_L - C_H 1$ module

Representative  $C_L - C_H 1$  interactions are presented in Table 9 and Fig. 6. The contacts observed in Fab Kol (human IgG1, $\lambda$ ) [Table 9a and Fig. 6(a)] include two salt bridges: one between Glu123-L and Lys213-H and the other between Glu124-L and Lys147-H. In Fab 3D6 (human IgG1, $\kappa$ ) (Table 9b), no salt bridges are formed, despite the fact that a glutamic acid residue is present at position 123 also in the 3D6 light chain. Actually, in 3D6, there is a favorable electrostatic interaction between the charged moieties of Glu123-L and Lys213-H, which are within 4.0 Å of each other. This interaction would be only about half as strong as that in Kol where the corresponding distance is 2.8 Å. The second salt bridge in Kol is not possible in 3D6 because the Glu at position 124 in  $C_{\lambda}$  is replaced by a Gln in  $C_{\kappa}$  (Table 2). Despite the many differences in sequence, the patterns of  $C_L - C_H 1$  interaction in these human Fabs, one with a  $\lambda$ and the other with a  $\kappa$  chain, are similar.

The Fab of 17/9 (IgG2a,  $\kappa$ ) (PDB Entry: 1HIL, first Fab in the entry) was chosen to represent the murine IgG subclasses in terms of the  $C_L$ - $C_H$  l interactions, since this structure has been determined to high resolution and refined to a high degree (Table 1). The  $C_L$ - $C_H$ 1 contact in 17/9 (Table 9c) shows a pattern similar to that of 3D6 (Table 9b), which is not surprising in view of the similarity in sequence of the homologous domains. The salt bridge between Glu123-L and Lys213-H is also found in 17/9 and in the  $C_L - C_H 1$  of the other murine IgG isotypes (data not shown). The inter-residue contacts in the  $C_L-C_H 1$  of the murine J539 (IgA, $\kappa$ ) Fab (PDB Entry: 2FBJ) are presented in Table 9d and Fig. 6(b) Again, the pattern of the contacts is similar to the others. However, the salt bridge found in the  $C_L$ - $C_H$  l interface in the murine and human IgGs is not possible in IgAs (murine or human), since the Lys at heavy-chain position 213 is not present in these molecules.

A cavity has been observed between  $C_L$  and  $C_H 1$  (Padlan *et al.*, 1986). It was proposed that the function of this cavity is to provide greater flexibility in the interaction between the domains, so that the variation in the interface residues in the different isotypes can be tolerated while still preserving the basic quaternary structure of the  $C_L-C_H 1$  module.

#### The Fab bend

The interactions between  $V_L$  and  $C_L$  and between  $V_H$ and  $C_H 1$  are not very strong and, in view of the variation MIMM 31/3-B in the Fab bend (Table 3), are variable. The contacts, computed for the most bent Fab, 8F5 [Fig. 3(a)], and for the most straight Fab, R19.9 (PDB Entry: 2F19) [Fig. 3(b)], are presented in Table 10. Included in Table 10 are the contacts for an Fab with an intermediate bend angle ( $153.0^{\circ}$ ), B13I2 (PDB Entry: 1IGF, first Fab in the entry).

In the case where the Fab is most bent [Fig. 3(a), Table 10a], the residues from  $V_H$ , which are involved in the contact, are from the N- and C-terminal segments of the domain; those from  $C_{H}1$  are from the N-terminal segment and from two bends: one at around position 151 and the other at around position 205; those from  $V_{L}$ come from the bend at around position 81 and from the C-terminal segment of the domain; those from  $C_1$  come from two bends: one at around position 140 and the other at around position 168. As the Fab becomes straighter (Table 10b), fewer contacts are formed; the  $V_{H}$ and C<sub>L</sub> segments involved in the interaction remain in contact, but interactions involving the N- and C-terminal segments of C<sub>H</sub>1 become less and less and are ultimately lost, as well as the interactions involving the bend at around position 81 of  $V_L$ . Not surprisingly, as the Fab becomes almost straight [Fig. 3(b), Table 10c], the N-terminal segment of V<sub>L</sub> starts to be involved in the contact, so that the  $V_L-C_L$  and  $V_H-C_H l$  interactions become more analogous.

The biological function of the  $C_L-C_H 1$  module is not obvious although the association of  $C_L$  and  $C_H 1$  necessarily increases the probability of a proper  $V_L-V_H$  quaternary interaction. In addition, the presence of additional domains in the Fab arms extends the reach of the antibody and the loose connection between the Fv and the  $C_L-C_H 1$  module contributes to the flexibility of the molecule (see below). It is also conceivable that the  $C_L$ and  $C_H 1$  may help conceal other ligand binding sites that are uncovered only when antigen is bound. A more definite function for  $C_L-C_H 1$  may be revealed in time.

#### The Fc

The structure of this fragment has been reviewed elsewhere (Padlan, 1990b) and some parts of that review are reproduced here. Crystal structures are available for the Fc of human IgG1 (Deisenhofer, 1981) and for that of rabbit IgG (Sutton and Phillips, 1983), and they are very similar. However, atomic coordinates are available for only the human Fc (PDB Entries: 1FC1 and 1FC2). The structure of the pFc' of guinea pig IgG has also been analysed (Bryant *et al.*, 1985) (PDB Entry: 1PFC) and it is found to be similar to that of the C $\gamma$  3–C $\gamma$ 3 module of human Fc $\gamma$ . We will confine our discussion to the structure of human Fc $\gamma$ .

The structure that is available for human Fc $\gamma$  is comprised of residues 238-443 (Eu numbering), which includes most of the C $\gamma$ 2 and C $\gamma$ 3 domains. In some crystal forms of Fc or of intact antibody, the two halves of the fragment are related by a crystallographic, i.e. exact, two-fold axis. In the crystal form of human Fc $\gamma$ that was analysed crystallographically, the two chains are related by a pseudo-dyad axis. In that structure



| 21 | 9 | 14 | ŝ | 6 | 14 | 1 | 4 | m | ŝ | m | - | 4 | 10 | m | Ś | ŝ | m | 1 | - | <br>116 |
|----|---|----|---|---|----|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|----|---|---|---|---|---|---|---------|
|    |   |    |   |   |    |   |   |   |   |   |   |   |    |   |   |   |   |   |   | <br>    |

|        |      |      |             | Tabl | e 9b. | C <sup>r</sup> -C <sup>H</sup> | 1 conta | acts in | the hu   | man (I, | gG1,ĸ)  | 3D6 (1 | PDB E      | ntry: 11 | DFB)   |        |          |          |
|--------|------|------|-------------|------|-------|--------------------------------|---------|---------|----------|---------|---------|--------|------------|----------|--------|--------|----------|----------|
|        | F126 | P127 | L128        | A129 | S131  | S132                           | S136    | T139 /  | 4141 L   | .145 K  | 147 H16 | 58 F17 | 0 P171     | V173     | Q175 \ | V185 J | [187 S21 | 9 Totals |
| F116   |      |      |             |      |       | 6                              | 5       | 5       | 6        |         |         |        |            |          |        |        | 5        | 21       |
| 1117   |      |      |             |      |       | 9                              |         |         |          |         |         |        |            |          |        |        |          | 9        |
| F118   |      |      | L           | _    | -     |                                |         |         | ŝ        |         |         |        |            |          |        |        |          | 14       |
| S121   |      | ŝ    |             |      |       |                                |         |         |          |         |         |        |            |          |        |        |          | ŝ        |
| E123   |      | 61   |             |      |       |                                |         |         |          |         |         |        |            |          |        |        |          | 2        |
| Q124   | 13   |      |             |      |       |                                |         |         |          |         |         |        |            |          |        |        |          | 14       |
| T129   |      |      |             |      |       |                                |         |         |          |         |         |        |            |          |        |        |          | I        |
| S131   |      |      |             |      |       |                                |         |         |          |         | 5       |        |            |          |        |        |          | 4        |
| VI33   |      |      | <b>61</b> 3 |      |       |                                |         |         |          |         |         |        |            |          |        |        |          | ŝ        |
| L135   |      |      |             |      |       |                                |         |         | <b>*</b> |         |         | ł      |            |          |        | 3      |          | s        |
| N137   |      |      |             |      |       |                                |         |         |          |         | 17      |        |            |          |        |        | -        | ŝ        |
| N138   |      |      |             |      |       |                                |         |         |          |         |         |        |            |          |        |        |          |          |
| Q160   |      |      |             |      |       |                                |         |         |          |         |         |        |            | *4       | ო      |        |          | 4        |
| S162   |      |      |             |      |       |                                |         |         |          |         |         | ï      | ×          | I        |        |        |          | 10       |
| V163   |      |      |             |      |       |                                |         |         |          |         |         |        | <b>m</b> i |          |        |        |          | m        |
| T164   |      |      |             |      |       |                                |         |         |          |         | yenni   | 4      |            |          |        |        |          | Ś        |
| S174   |      |      |             |      |       |                                |         |         |          |         | guine   | ষ      |            |          |        |        |          | ŝ        |
| L175   |      |      |             |      |       |                                |         |         |          |         |         | ŝ      |            |          |        |        |          | £        |
| S176   |      |      |             |      |       |                                |         |         |          |         |         | 5      |            |          |        |        |          | 7        |
| T180   |      |      |             |      |       |                                |         |         |          |         | 1       |        |            |          |        |        |          |          |
| C214   |      |      |             |      |       |                                |         |         |          |         |         |        |            |          |        |        | I        | 1        |
| Totals | 13   | ŝ    | 10          | -    | -     | 12                             | *0      | 2       | 12       |         | 65      | 20     | 1          | 7        | 3      | 3      | 3 1      | 116      |

|                    | ا ہے ا           |        |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |        |
|--------------------|------------------|--------|------|------|------|------|------|------|------|------|------|------|------|------|------|------|------|------|------|------|------|------|--------|
|                    | Totals           | 4      | 22   | 1    | ٢    | 9    | 19   | 5    | S    | 21   | 4    | 5    | ×    | -    | 13   | 4    | Э    | 7    | 10   | 8    | 12   | ę    | 163    |
|                    | K213             |        |      |      |      | 2°   |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | 2      |
|                    | S185             |        |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | ×    | ŝ    |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | Ξ      |
| try)               | S184             |        |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | 2    |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | ļ    | 5      |
| the en             | S183             |        |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | 2    |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | ŝ    |      | 5      |
| ab in              | 181              |        |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | 7    |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | 2      |
| irst Fa            | 0175 J           |        |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | 7    |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | 2      |
| HIL, f             | 173 0            |        |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | 4    | l    | -    |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | 6      |
| try: 11            | 171 V            |        |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | 8    | 4    |      |      |      |      |      |      | 2      |
| B Ent              | 170 P            |        |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | 4    | -    |      |      |      | 4    |      | 5    |      | 4    | 8    | 6    |      | 2 1    |
| 6 (PD              | 69 F             |        |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | _    |      |      |      |      |      | 3      |
| c) 17/             | 68 TI            |        |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | •    |      |      |      |      |        |
| 32a,F              | 7 H I            |        |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | α,   |      |      |      |      |      | (4   | U    |      |      |      | 13     |
| e (IgC             | K14′             |        |      |      |      |      |      | e    |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | 3    | 9      |
| nurin              | L145             |        |      |      |      |      |      | 7    | -    |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | 3      |
| the r              | G137             |        |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | ы    |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | 2      |
| acts in            | T135             | 4      | 4    |      |      |      |      |      |      | -    |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | 6      |
| conta              | V131             |        |      | 1    |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | -      |
| L-C <sub>H</sub> 1 | 130 <sup>1</sup> |        | 7    |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | 2      |
| 9c. C              | 129              |        | 4    |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | 4      |
| Table              | .128 A           |        | 5    |      |      |      |      |      | 4    | 7    |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | 8      |
| ·                  | 127 L            |        | -    |      | 4    | 7    |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | 9      |
|                    | 26 P             |        |      |      | ~    | 5    | ¢    |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | 4      |
|                    | ۲۱               | i<br>I |      |      |      |      | 1    |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      |      | 5      |
|                    |                  | S116   | F118 | P119 | S121 | E123 | Q124 | S131 | V133 | F135 | N137 | N138 | L160 | N161 | S162 | W163 | T164 | D167 | S174 | M175 | S176 | S180 | Totals |

|                   |                  |        |                    |                    | Tab                 | le 9d.      | ပု<br>ပ                    | <sub>H</sub> 1 con | tacts i                 | n the r            | nurine              | (IgA,/            | د) J53            | 9 (PD             | B Enti            | y: 2FI                        | <b>BJ</b> )       | l                |                        |  |
|-------------------|------------------|--------|--------------------|--------------------|---------------------|-------------|----------------------------|--------------------|-------------------------|--------------------|---------------------|-------------------|-------------------|-------------------|-------------------|-------------------------------|-------------------|------------------|------------------------|--|
|                   | Y126             | P127   | L128               | T129               | L130                | L13/        | t 1141                     | L145               | H147                    | T166               | V168                | F170 ]            | P171 /            | A173 I            | 174 A             | V175 7                        | 181 5             | 5183             | Q185                   | Totals                                   |
| S116              |                  |        |                    |                    |                     |             | -                          |                    |                         |                    |                     |                   |                   |                   |                   |                               |                   |                  |                        | 1  |
| 1117              |                  |        |                    |                    |                     | 3           |                            |                    |                         |                    |                     |                   |                   |                   |                   |                               |                   |                  |                        | ę  |
| F118              |                  |        | 7                  | 9                  | 9                   |             | 9                          |                    |                         |                    |                     |                   |                   |                   |                   |                               |                   |                  |                        | 25                                       |
| S121              |                  | 9      |                    |                    |                     |             |                            |                    |                         |                    |                     |                   |                   |                   |                   |                               |                   |                  |                        | 6  |
| E123              | 4                | ŝ      |                    |                    |                     |             |                            |                    |                         |                    |                     |                   |                   |                   |                   |                               |                   |                  |                        | 7  |
| Q124              | 18               |        |                    |                    |                     |             |                            |                    |                         |                    |                     |                   |                   |                   |                   |                               |                   |                  |                        | 18                                       |
| S127              | 2                |        |                    |                    |                     |             |                            |                    |                         |                    |                     |                   |                   |                   |                   |                               |                   |                  |                        | 7  |
| S131              |                  |        |                    |                    |                     |             |                            | 6                  | -                       |                    |                     |                   |                   |                   |                   |                               |                   |                  |                        | ŝ  |
| V133              |                  |        | 4                  |                    |                     |             |                            | -                  |                         |                    |                     |                   |                   |                   |                   |                               |                   |                  |                        | ę  |
| F135              |                  |        | 2                  |                    |                     |             |                            |                    |                         |                    |                     | 9                 |                   |                   |                   |                               |                   | ŝ                | 10                     | 21                                       |
| N137              |                  |        |                    |                    |                     |             |                            |                    |                         |                    |                     |                   |                   |                   |                   |                               |                   |                  | 8                      | ×  |
| L160              |                  |        |                    |                    |                     |             |                            |                    |                         |                    |                     |                   |                   | 4                 | 4                 | 4                             | 2                 |                  |                        | 14                                       |
| N161              |                  |        |                    |                    |                     |             |                            |                    |                         |                    |                     |                   |                   | -                 |                   |                               |                   |                  |                        | -  |
| S162              |                  |        |                    |                    |                     |             |                            |                    |                         |                    |                     |                   | 7                 |                   |                   |                               |                   |                  |                        | ę  |
| W163              |                  |        |                    |                    |                     |             |                            |                    |                         |                    |                     |                   | e                 |                   |                   |                               |                   |                  |                        | e  |
| T164              |                  |        |                    |                    |                     |             |                            |                    |                         |                    | -                   | 3                 |                   |                   |                   |                               |                   |                  |                        | ę  |
| K169              |                  |        |                    |                    |                     |             |                            |                    |                         | 1                  |                     |                   |                   |                   |                   |                               |                   |                  |                        | -  |
| S174              |                  |        |                    |                    |                     |             |                            |                    |                         |                    | -                   | ŝ                 |                   |                   |                   |                               |                   |                  |                        | 4  |
| M175              |                  |        |                    |                    |                     |             |                            |                    |                         |                    |                     | 7                 |                   |                   |                   |                               |                   |                  |                        | 7  |
| S176              |                  |        |                    |                    |                     |             |                            |                    |                         |                    |                     | 10                |                   |                   |                   |                               |                   | 2                |                        | 12                                       |
| T178              |                  |        |                    |                    |                     |             |                            | 1                  |                         |                    |                     |                   |                   |                   |                   |                               |                   |                  |                        | 1  |
| T180              |                  |        |                    |                    |                     |             |                            |                    | -                       |                    |                     |                   |                   |                   |                   |                               |                   |                  |                        | 1  |
| Totals            | 24               | 6      | Ξ                  | 6                  | 7                   | 2           | 7                          | 4                  | 5                       | -                  | 7                   | 28                | s                 | 9                 | 4                 | 4                             | 5                 | s                | 18                     | 147                                      |
| The resi<br>the n | dues on<br>umber | the he | orizont<br>racting | tal line<br>2 atom | es are l<br>1 pairs | from 6, one | C <sub>L</sub> and<br>from | those<br>residue   | along 1<br><i>i</i> and | he vert<br>the oth | tical ar<br>ter fro | e from<br>m resid | C <sub>H</sub> 1. | In thes<br>The su | e mati<br>perscri | ices of<br>pt <sup>*</sup> th | conta<br>at is fu | icts, tl<br>ound | he elemen<br>after som | c(i, j) represents<br>to matrix elements |

indicates that the contact includes a favorable electrostatic interaction; the superscript  $^{h}$  signifies that the contact involves at least one hydrogen bond. In 3D6 and in Kol, a disulfide bond exists between Cys214-L and Cys200-H. See footnote to Table 4 for the definition of contacts.



Fig. 6. Stereodrawings of the  $\alpha$ -carbon trace of the  $C_L$ - $C_H 1$  modules of Kol (a) and of J539 (b) showing the residues which are in the  $C_L$ - $C_H 1$  contact. The  $C_L$ s are drawn with thinner lines on the left. The side chains of the residues involved in the contact are shown in full.

(Fig. 7), the two  $C\gamma 3$  domains are related by a rotation angle of 179.3° while the  $C\gamma 2$  domains are related by a rotation of 174.3°. Carbohydrate moieties, that are linked to the asparagines at position 297 (Eu numbering) in both chains, lie between the two  $C\gamma 2$  domains. The  $C\gamma 3$  domains are in close association and form a compact globule, while the  $C\gamma 2$  domains are farther apart.

The C $\gamma$ 2 and C $\gamma$ 3 domains both resemble closely the constant domains of the Fabs. The residues which form the bilayer  $\beta$ -pleated sheet structure are indicated in Table 2. The interior of both domains is filled with

from one  $\beta$ -sheet in each bilayer form the contact between the C $\gamma$ 3 (Fig. 8). The interaction is strong and involves more than 20 residues from each domain (Table 11). Approximately 2000 Å<sup>2</sup> of surface area are buried in the C $\gamma$ 3–C $\gamma$ 3 interface, where several hydrophobic residues, including some with large, aromatic side chains, are found. In addition, there are a number of hydrogen-bond interactions and three salt bridges.

mainly hydrophobic side chains. Side chains emanating

In contrast, the analogous sheets in the  $C\gamma 2$  domains are covered by the carbohydrates linked to the asparagines at 297 (Fig. 7), so that a mode of association, like the one in the  $C\gamma 3$  domains, is not possible. Instead, the  $C\gamma 2$  domains interact through their carbohydrate moieties, and only weakly. Even without the

Table 10a. Atomic contacts between the variable and constant domains of the same chain in 8F5 Fab (PDB Entry: 1BBD)

|                |      |      |              | C,   | н 1  |      |      |      |
|----------------|------|------|--------------|------|------|------|------|------|
| V <sub>H</sub> | A118 | K119 | T120         | F150 | P151 | P153 | P205 | A206 |
| A9             |      |      |              |      |      | 1    | 2    | 1    |
| L11            | 1    | 1    | 4            | 1    | 1    |      |      |      |
| S108           |      |      |              |      |      | 1    |      |      |
| T110           |      |      |              | 1    | 3    |      |      |      |
| S112           |      |      |              | 2    |      |      |      |      |
|                |      | C    | ~L           |      |      |      |      |      |
| VL             | Y140 | Q166 | <b>S</b> 168 | K169 | S171 |      |      |      |
| A80            |      |      | 5            | 2    |      |      |      |      |
| E81            |      |      | 2            |      |      |      |      |      |
| L83            |      | 4    |              |      |      |      |      |      |
| E105           |      | 2    |              |      |      |      |      |      |
| L106           | 2    | 11   |              |      | 1    |      |      |      |
| K107           | 1    |      |              |      |      |      |      |      |

Table 10b. Atomic contacts between the variable and constant domains of the same chain in B1312 Fab (PDB Entry: 1IGF)

| A118 | C <sub>H</sub> 1                 |   |  |  |
|------|----------------------------------|---|--|--|
|      | 1120                             | F150  | P151   |  |
| 1    | 1                                | 3   | 3  |  |
|      |                                  | i   |  |  |
|      |                                  | 2   |  |  |
|      |                                  | CL  |  |  |
| Y140 | Q166                             | S168  | S171   | Y173   |
|      | 2                                | 1   |  |  |
| 6    | 5                                |   |  | 5  |
| 1    | 6                                |   | 4  |  |
| 5    |                                  |   |  |  |
|      | A118<br>1<br>Y140<br>6<br>1<br>5 | A118         1120           1         1           Y140         Q166           2         6           1         6           5         5 | $ \begin{array}{c ccccc}  \hline A118 & 1120 & F150 \\ \hline 1 & 1 & 3 \\  & & 1 \\  & & 2 \\ \hline Y140 & Q166 & S168 \\ \hline 2 & 1 \\ 6 & 5 \\ 1 & 6 \\ 5 & \\ \end{array} $ | A118         1120         F150         P151           1         1         3         3           1         2         1           Q166         S168         S171           2         1         6           5         4         5 |

| Table 10c. Atomic contacts between the vari- |
|--|
| able and constant domains of the same chain  |
| in R19.9 Fab (PDB Entry: 2F19)               |

|                | $\mathbf{C}_{\mathbf{I}}$ | <sub>H</sub> 1 |        |      |
|----------------|---------------------------|----------------|--------|------|
| V <sub>H</sub> | F150                      | P151           |        |      |
| LII            | 4                         | 1              |        |      |
| S112           | 4                         |                |        |      |
|                |                           | C              | -1.    |      |
| VL             | Y140                      | Q166           | ~ S171 | Y173 |
| S12            | 1                         |                |        |      |
| E105           | 4                         | 3              |        | 4    |
| 1106           | 4                         | 11             | 2      |      |
| 1100           | •                         |                |        |      |

The residues on the horizontal lines are from the constant domains and those along the vertical are from the variable domains of the Fabs. See footnote to Table 9.

carbohydrates, the  $C\gamma 2$  domains may not be able to associate in the manner of the  $C\gamma 3$ ; the N-termini of the  $C\gamma 2$  domains are probably too close, in view of the interchain disulfide bridge(s) in the hinge region, while the N-termini of the  $C\gamma 3$  domains are far (more than 40 Å) apart.

The longitudinal contact between the C $\gamma$ 2 and C $\gamma$ 3 domains is substantial, with approximately 780 Å<sup>2</sup> of

surface area buried by the interaction. Seventeen residues, 8 from  $C\gamma 2$  and 9 from  $C\gamma 3$ , are involved in this contact, which includes two salt-bridges (Table 12).

The amino acid sequence of human IgG1 C $\gamma$ 2 and C $\gamma$ 3 and those of the homologous domains of the other human heavy chains can be compared in Table 2. The various IgG isotypes are similar to a very high degree and there is little doubt that the structures of their Fc will be essentially the same. The sequences of the other heavy chains are not as similar but they share enough structural features with IgG1 to justify the assertion that the homologous structures in their Fc will have the same general architecture.

No obvious structural function can be attributed to the carbohydrate attached to the Asn at 297 in IgG1 (Fig. 7). Interestingly, all the other heavy chains are probably glycosylated at the same (homologous) position, except the IgAs. In the latter, a probable site of carbohydrate attachment is the Asn at position 258 (Table 2). It is interesting that the residue at position 258 in IgG1 is close to the end of the carbohydrate moiety (Fig. 7) and contacts the last sugar residue. One wonders whether, in the IgAs, a carbohydrate attached to residue 258 might follow a course reversed in relation to that found in IgG1, but nevertheless covering one face of  $C_H 2$ in much the same way as that observed in IgG1 (Deisenhofer, 1981). It should be pointed out that the



Fig. 7. Stereodrawing of the  $\alpha$ -carbon trace of human IgG1 Fc. The C<sub>H</sub>2 domains are on top and the C<sub>H</sub>3 domains are at the bottom. The first (number 238) and last (number 443) residues that were visible in the crystal structure (Deisenhofer, 1981), and the C-terminus of the C<sub>H</sub>2 domain (number 340) are labeled in each chain. Every tenth residue, starting from number 240, is indicated by a larger, open circle. The intradomain disulfide bonds are drawn with thicker bonds and filled circles in the middle of each domain. The  $\beta$ -pleated sheets are drawn with thick bonds, thicker for the first sheets.



Fig. 8. Stereodrawing of the  $\alpha$ -carbon trace of C<sub>H</sub>3–C<sub>H</sub>3 module of human IgG1 Fc. The side chains of the residues involved in the interdomain contact are shown in full.

| FO                        |
|---------------------------|
| Ξ                         |
| Entry                     |
| B                         |
| (PL                       |
| $\mathbf{F}_{\mathbf{C}}$ |
| 75                        |
| Ig(                       |
| human                     |
| Ë                         |
| ns                        |
| chai                      |
| pu                        |
| seco                      |
| and                       |
| rst                       |
| Ę                         |
| the                       |
| between                   |
| contacts                  |
| 3                         |
| Ϋ́                        |
| 5                         |
| ΰ                         |
| Ι.                        |
| ole                       |
| <b>Fa</b> t               |
| ι,                        |

.

|    |   |    |   |   |   | Ś  | 12 |   |   |    |   |    |   |   |   |   |   |    |    |    |    | 18  |
|----|---|----|---|---|---|----|----|---|---|----|---|----|---|---|---|---|---|----|----|----|----|-----|
| _  |   |    | 3 |   | - |    |    |   |   |    |   |    |   |   |   |   |   |    |    |    |    | 4   |
|    |   |    | 1 |   |   |    |    |   |   |    |   |    |   |   |   |   |   |    |    |    |    | 1   |
|    |   | 1  | б |   |   |    |    |   |   |    |   |    |   |   |   |   |   |    |    |    |    | 4   |
| ~  |   | 4  |   |   |   |    |    |   |   |    |   |    |   |   |   |   |   |    |    |    | 5, | 6   |
| 2  |   | 10 |   |   |   |    |    |   |   | 3° |   |    |   |   |   |   |   |    |    |    |    | 13  |
| 0  | 6 | -  |   |   |   |    |    |   |   |    |   |    |   |   |   |   |   |    |    |    |    | m   |
|    |   |    |   |   |   |    |    |   | - | -  |   |    |   |   |   |   |   |    |    |    |    | 2   |
| 5  |   |    | - |   |   |    |    |   |   |    |   |    |   |   |   |   |   |    | L  |    |    | 10  |
| ~  |   |    |   |   |   |    |    |   |   |    |   |    |   |   |   |   |   |    |    | 7  |    | 6   |
| 0  |   |    |   |   |   |    | 6  |   |   |    |   |    |   |   |   |   |   |    |    |    |    | 7   |
| 0  |   |    |   |   |   |    |    |   |   |    |   |    |   |   |   |   |   | 1  |    |    |    | I   |
| 5  |   |    |   |   |   |    |    |   |   |    |   |    |   |   |   | 4 | 1 | 41 |    |    |    | 10  |
|    |   |    |   |   |   |    |    |   |   |    |   |    | 5 |   | e |   |   |    |    |    |    | 6   |
| 6  |   |    |   |   |   |    |    |   |   |    |   |    |   | 1 | 1 |   |   |    |    |    |    | 7   |
| ~  |   |    |   |   |   |    |    |   |   |    |   |    | ŝ | - |   |   |   |    |    |    |    | 4   |
|    |   |    |   |   |   |    |    |   |   |    |   | m  |   |   |   |   |   |    |    |    |    | ę   |
| •  |   |    |   |   |   |    |    |   |   |    |   | 5  |   |   |   |   |   |    |    | ę  |    | œ   |
| _  |   |    |   |   |   |    |    |   |   |    | 1 |    |   |   |   |   |   |    |    |    |    | ļ   |
| 2  |   |    |   |   |   |    |    |   |   |    |   | 5  | 7 |   |   |   |   |    |    | 7  |    | 6   |
| 7  |   |    |   |   |   |    |    | 7 |   |    |   |    | 1 |   |   |   |   |    | 16 | 7  |    | 31  |
| 6  |   |    |   |   |   |    |    |   | - |    |   |    |   |   |   |   | 7 |    | 9  |    |    | 12  |
| 6  |   |    |   |   | - | 10 |    |   |   |    |   |    |   |   | 1 |   |   |    |    |    |    | 11  |
| ls | 6 | 16 | ٢ | - | m | 15 | 14 | 7 | 7 | 4  | - | 13 | = | 5 | 4 | 4 | ы |    | 31 | 14 | s  | 169 |

|                  |      |      |      |      | С              | <sub>н</sub> 3 |      |                |      |        |
|------------------|------|------|------|------|----------------|----------------|------|----------------|------|--------|
| С <sub>н</sub> 2 | Y373 | P374 | E376 | I377 | E380           | M428           | H429 | E430           | H435 | Totals |
| P247             |      |      | 1    | 1    |                |                |      |                |      | 2      |
| K248             |      |      |      |      | 3 <sup>s</sup> | 5              |      |                |      | 8      |
| L251             |      |      |      |      |                | 2              | 4    | 3              | 7    | 16     |
| M252             |      |      |      |      |                | 3              |      |                |      | 3      |
| L314             |      |      |      |      |                |                |      | 4              | 1    | 5      |
| K338             |      | 1    |      |      |                |                |      | 7 <sup>s</sup> |      | 8      |
| A339             | 2    | 1    |      |      |                |                |      |                |      | 3      |
| <b>K</b> 340     | 2    |      |      |      |                |                |      |                |      | 2      |
| Totals           | 4    | 2    | 1    | 1    | 3              | 10             | 4    | 14             | 8    | 47     |

Table 12. C<sub>H</sub>2–C<sub>H</sub>3 contacts in human IgG1 Fc (PDB Entry: 1FC1, first chain in the entry)

The residues on the horizontal line are from the  $C_H 3$  domain and those along the vertical are from the  $C_H 2$  domain of the first chain of the human IgG1 Fc (PDB Entry: 1FC1). See footnote to Table 9.

carbohydrate moieties attached to the asparagines at 297 in rabbit IgG were found to be asymmetrically disposed and to be in greater contact than those in human Fcy (Sutton and Phillips, 1983). A detailed comparison of these two  $Fc\gamma$  structures, when atomic coordinates for the rabbit Fc become available, may reveal other differences.

#### The hinge

Antibodies exhibit segmental flexibility, which is made possible by the presence of the hinge region between the Fabs and the Fc and of the switch regions within each fragment [see, for example, Burton (1985, 1990b) and Tan et al. (1990)]. The hinge permits the fragments to rotate or to wag, while the switch regions permit the fragments to flex. By and large, the hinge can be viewed as consisting of three parts: a flexible upper region which permits the Fabs to rotate and wag and which also determines the separation between the Fab arms, a stiff middle which acts as a spacer between the Fabs and the Fc, and a flexible lower region which allows the Fc to wag. The rigidity of the middle part is almost certainly provided by the inter-heavy chain cystines and by the many proline residues that are often found in the hinge. The lower part of the hinge would be the segment between the last inter-heavy chain cystine and the residue which marks the beginning of the compact Fc (Pro238 in human IgG1 or homologous residue in the other antibody classes). The residues which constitute the flexible upper part of the hinge are not easily identified in the absence of three-dimensional structure.

The size of the three hinge parts varies among the different antibody classes, so that the middle part, for example, ranges in size from the single cystine in human IgD to more than 40 residues in IgG3 (Table 2).

Very little three-dimensional information is available for the hinge, mainly because of segmental flexibility. The crystal structure of the intact human IgG1, Kol, for example, did not reveal the Fc, which ostensibly assumed several different positions and orientations and, thus, was "averaged out" in the electron-density map (Marquart et al., 1980). The portion of Kol that was visible extended only to Cys229 (Eu numbering). Consequently, the octapeptide, PAPELLGG, between Cys229 (the last residue visible in Kol) and Pro238 [the first residue visible in the Fc structure (Deisenhofer, 1981)], has not been visualized and probably represents the most flexible part of human IgG1. The crystal structure of a murine IgG2a monoclonal antibody showing a complete hinge has been reported (Harris et al., 1992), but full details of the structure have not been presented.

In the picture of the human IgG1 hinge that is available (Fig. 9), the segment, DKTHTCPPC, which represents the upper and middle portions of the hinge, contains strong secondary structural elements; the KTHT region is  $\alpha$ -helical and the CPPC segments from the two chains form a poly-L-proline double helix, cross-linked by the two pairs of cysteines (Marquart *et al.*, 1980). This part of the IgG1 can be expected to be rigid. Indeed, a visual examination of this region in the crystal structure (Fig. 9) strongly suggests that at least a partial unraveling of the  $\alpha$ -helical structure may



Fig. 9. Stereodrawing of the part of the hinge that is visible in the crystal structure of Kol (Marquart *et al.*, 1980). The orientation is the same as in Fig. 1.

be required to give the Fabs the freedom to rotate. In this antibody, the Fabs are separated by only 10 Å (the distance between the C-termini of the Fabs).

We can only speculate on the nature of the hinge in the other antibody classes and isotypes. The hinge of human IgD is probably the most floppy, having 46 amino acids between the putative end of the Fab and the inter-heavy chain cystine (Table 2); of course, the possible occurrence of helical structures in this stretch cannot be ruled out. The human IgD hinge also may provide the greatest possible separation between the Fabs [each of the two 46-a.a. segments could be as long as 160 Å (3.5 Å per residue) if fully extended]. The hinge of human IgG3, on the other hand, has been proposed to separate the Fabs from the Fc with a stiff rod 140 Å long in the form of a polyproline double helix stabilized by many disulfide bonds (Marquart et al., 1980). The hinge regions of human IgG4 and of the two IgAs are probably also stiff in view of the presence of many prolines (Table 2).

The  $C_H 2$  domains of IgE and IgM could also be viewed as rigid Fab separators and thus function in part as "hinges". Modeling of the Fc of IgE (Padlan and Davies, 1986; Pumphrey, 1986; Helm *et al.*, 1991) positions the ends of the Fabs approximately 33 Å apart. A flexible segment following the (last) inter-heavy chain disulfide bridge has been proposed for IgE (Helm *et al.*, 1991) and for IgM (Perkins *et al.*, 1991).

Nature seems to have made provision for coping with different varieties of antigens by the use of the hinge. The variation in hinge length and amino acid sequence in the different heavy chain classes and isotypes results in antibodies with different reach and rotational adaptability, giving the immune system the means to cope with the possibility of different spacings and orientations of antigenic determinants (e.g. Beale and Feinstein, 1976; Burton, 1990b). One wonders also whether the variation in the structure of the hinge may have a bearing on the respective roles that the different antibody types play in the overall immune response.

The demonstrated flexibility of the lower portion of the hinge poses an intriguing question since a concerted conformational change in the two disulfide-linked chains would be required to produce an overall deformation in this part of the antibody. In view of the fact that alterations in the conformation of a polypeptide backbone are accomplished by changes in the peptide dihedral angles, which are restricted (Sasisekharan, 1962), this part of the hinge may not be dynamically, i.e. continuously, deformable. Indeed, flexed forms of antibodies, e.g. states in which the Fc and the Fabs are not co-planar, may persist for sufficiently long times to be observable (Zheng *et al.*, 1991, 1992).

# STRUCTURAL ASPECTS OF ANTIBODY FUNCTION

#### Antigen binding

The antibody function for which we have the most information is antigen binding. It is well known that the binding of antibody to its antigen is exquisitely specific. Yet, it is also known that many antibodies are polyreactive, i.e. they are capable of binding to several different antigens, although with low affinity [see, for example, Burastero *et al.* (1988)]. Polyreactivity is usually associated with natural or pre-immune antibodies which frequently display reactivity towards self-antigens and which are usually encoded by unmutated or essentially unmutated germline genes [see, for example, Baccala *et al.* (1989) and Logtenberg (1990)]. The structural basis for polyreactivity is not yet clear. What is better understood is the basis for high-affinity antibody-antigen interactions.

(i) Structural correlates of antigen-binding specificity. The high specificity of the binding of antibody to its antigen is due to the complementarity in the structures of the antibody combining site and the antigenic determinant (the epitope). This is illustrated by the complexes between the antibodies D1.3, HyHEL-5 and HyHEL-10 and their antigen, hen egg white lysozyme (Table 13,

|          |      |     |     |        |     |     |      | An   | tibody |     |       |       |     |     |      |        |
|----------|------|-----|-----|--------|-----|-----|------|------|--------|-----|-------|-------|-----|-----|------|--------|
|          |      |     | Li  | ght Ch | ain |     |      |      |        |     | Heavy | Chain |     |     |      |        |
| Lysozyme | [Y32 | Y49 | Y50 | T53    | F91 | W92 | S93] | [G31 | Y32    | W52 | G53   | D54   | D97 | Y98 | R99] | Totals |
| D18      |      |     | 5   |        |     |     |      |      |        | _   |       |       |     |     |      | 5      |
| N19      |      | 1   | 4   | 2      |     |     |      |      |        |     |       |       |     |     |      | 7      |
| G22      |      | 1   |     |        |     |     |      |      |        |     |       |       | 1   |     | 3    | 5      |
| Y23      |      |     |     |        |     |     |      |      |        |     |       |       | 2   |     |      | 2      |
| S24      |      |     |     |        |     |     |      |      |        |     |       |       | 9   | 2   |      | 11     |
| N27      |      |     |     |        |     |     |      |      |        |     |       |       | 3   |     |      | 3      |
| K116     |      |     |     |        |     |     |      | 2    | 1      |     |       |       |     |     |      | 3      |
| G117     |      |     |     |        |     |     |      | 3    |        | 1   | 6     | 1     |     |     |      | 11     |
| T118     |      |     |     |        |     |     |      |      |        | 1   |       | 4     |     |     |      | 5      |
| D119     |      |     |     |        |     |     |      |      |        | 12  |       |       |     | 4   |      | 16     |
| V120     |      |     |     |        |     |     |      |      |        |     |       |       |     | 4   |      | 4      |
| Q121     | 9    |     |     |        | 4   | 8   | 1    |      |        |     |       |       |     | 7   |      | 29     |
| I124     | 1    |     |     |        |     | 2   |      |      |        |     |       |       |     |     |      | 3      |
| R125     |      |     |     |        |     | 6   |      |      |        |     |       |       |     |     |      | 6      |
| Totals   | 10   | 2   | 9   | 2      | 4   | 16  | 1    | 5    | 1      | 14  | 6     | 5     | 15  | 17  | 3    | 110    |

Table 13a. Contacts between antibody and ligand in the D1.3-lysozyme complex (PDB Entry: 1FDL)

|   |          | otals         | 9   | 2   | 7   | 6   | 5   | ŝ   | 7   | e   | 1   | S   | 5   | 0   | s   | 16  | -1  | 5          | 5      |
|---|----------|---------------|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|------------|--------|
|   |          | ] Tc          |     | -   |     | ŝ   |     |     |     |     |     |     |     | ŝ   |     |     |     |            | 14     |
|   |          | 797           |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     | Ś   | 9   | S   | 2   |     |            | 23     |
| ,   |          | 96N           |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |            | 1      |
|   |          | G95           |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     | 4   |     |     |     |            | 4      |
| 1111 7 .                                      |          | N58           |     | 7   | 6   |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |            | 6      |
|   |          | T57           |     | 7   |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |            | 5      |
|   |          | in<br>S56     | m   | 9   |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |            | 10     |
| id III AA                                     |          | / Cha         | -   |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     | ,          | 1      |
| , <u>, , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , </u> |          | Heavy<br>54 G |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     | ~          |        |
| - 1902  |          | 5. S:         |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     | <b>U</b> , | 4.     |
| 2.7   | <u>v</u> | L5            |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     | _   | -          | 2      |
|   | tibod    | E50           |     |     |     | 4   |     |     |     |     |     |     |     | 53  |     |     |     |            | 9      |
|   | An       | W47           |     |     |     | m   |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |            | ε      |
|   |          | E35           |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     | l s |     |     |     |            |        |
| n 116a  |          | W33           |     | 7   |     |     |     |     |     |     | -   | 5   |     | 6   |     |     |     |            | 11     |
|   | 1        | ] [Sec        |     |     |     | S   |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |            | s      |
| 0011110                                       |          | 293 I         |     |     |     | 12  | ÷   | 4   |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |            | 17     |
| 1177  |          | 92 H          |     |     |     | 4   | 2   | -   |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |            | -      |
| 200   |          | lain<br>91 C  | ĺ   |     |     |     |     |     |     | e   |     |     |     | -   |     |     |     |            |        |
| 170111  |          | N Ch          |     |     |     | -   |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |            | 6      |
| 5   |          | t D5          |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     | e   |     |            | m      |
| 1 21  |          | Y34           |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     | -   |     |            |        |
| 1 1   | 1        | Y32           |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     | S   |     |            | s      |
|   |          | [N31          |     |     |     |     |     |     | 7   |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |     |            | 2      |
|   |          | Lysozyme      | Q41 | T43 | N44 | R45 | N46 | T47 | D48 | G49 | T51 | Y53 | G67 | R68 | T69 | P70 | S81 | L84        | Totals |

Table 13b. Contacts between antibody and ligand in the HvHEL-5-Lysozyme complex (PDB Entry: 2HFL)

| Entry: 3HFM) |
|--------------|
| (PDB         |
| complex      |
| -lysozyme    |
| L-10-        |
| yHE          |
| he H         |
| in tl        |
| d ligand     |
| y anc        |
| antibod      |
| between      |
| Contacts     |
| 13c. (       |
| Table        |

|         | Totals        |   | 180  |          |
|---------|---------------|---|--|----------|
|         | [56M          | - 4   | 5         Tota           6         20           21         20           31         5           5         5 | 2        |
|         | Y58           | v - e v   | 2  |          |
|         | S56           | v v   | 7<br>21GF<br>F100]<br>6<br>6<br>2<br>°   | •        |
|         | S54           | 7   | 2 Entry:<br>2 2 2 2 2 2  | n        |
| Chain   | Y53           | v – 6   | 25<br>Y95<br>8<br>8  | 5        |
| Ione    | S52           | 7   | 7<br>F58<br>F58<br>4   | ø        |
| ليز     | Y 50          | v v   | 3 3 3 11   | 0        |
|         | Y33           | <u> </u>  | 16       Deptide       7   | -        |
| dy      | D32           |   | 2<br>dy<br>feavy<br>653  | $\circ$  |
| utibo   | S31           | 4 (1  | 6<br>The B<br>Vntibo<br>F<br>F<br>SS2a<br>3<br>12  | <u>-</u> |
| Ā       | [T30          | 12  | I2           and in           2           3           3  | ۲        |
|         | Y96]          | ŝ   | 3 151 151 151 151 1  | 4        |
|         | W94           | 0   | 2<br>00dy a<br>1   |          |
|         | N92           | 4 4   | 8 antit 1 antit 4 4 4 4 4 4 4 4 4 4 4 4 4 4 4 4 4 4  | 4        |
| .5      | S91           | Ś   | 5<br>P95]  | ~        |
| 90<br>• | n Ulla<br>Q53 | ς τ.  | 10           acts b           6           1           1  | -        |
| 10:1    | Y50           | 4 <u>c</u>  | 17<br>Chain<br>G91   | 4        |
|         | N32           | - m -   | 5<br>le 13d<br>Y32<br>Y32  | 4        |
|         | N31           | - 8 Q 4   | 19<br>Tab<br>D30   | 7        |
|         | [G30          | ς   | 6 6 [D28   | 9        |
|         | Lysozyme      | R14<br>H15<br>G16<br>K20<br>R21<br>W63<br>R73<br>L75<br>T89<br>K96<br>K96<br>S100<br>S100<br>G102<br>G102 | Totals<br>Peptide<br>E1<br>V2<br>V3<br>P4<br>H5<br>K7<br>K7  | Totals   |

The residues on the horizontal line are from the antibody and those along the vertical are from the ligand. See footnote to Table 9.



Fig. 10. Stereodrawing of the interaction between the antigen, hen egg white lysozyme, and the antibodies D1.3 (a), HyHEL-5 (b) and HyHEL-10 (c). Only the  $\alpha$ -carbons are traced, except for the residues involved in the interaction, which are drawn in full. In these drawings, the lysozyme is on top and the Fv of the antibody is at the bottom; the V<sub>L</sub>s are drawn with thinner lines on the left. The figures are oriented such that the Fvs are maximally superposed.

Fig. 10). There is complementarity in the antibody and antigen surfaces which are in contact, so that depressions in one are by and large filled by protrusions from the other [in D1.3 and HyHEL-5, solvent molecules are found trapped in the interface between the two macromolecules (Sheriff *et al.*, 1987; Fischmann *et al.*, 1991)]. There is also complementarity in the physical and chemical properties of the interacting surfaces, so that hydrogen bonds are formed whenever possible and, in the case of HyHEL-5, oppositely-charged side chains form ion pairs (Table 13b). Many aromatic residues figure prominently in these antibody-antigen interactions.

The interactions between antibody and specific ligand in various complexes are summarized in Table 14. The contacts involve van der Waals' interactions, hydrogen bonds between polar groups and ion pairs. Interestingly, the hydrogen bonds mostly involve side chain atoms; very few main-chain-main-chain hydrogen bonds are observed in these antibody-ligand complexes.

The interaction between antibody and larger ligands, e.g. peptides and trinucleotides, is comparable to that between antibody and whole antigen (Table 14). It is seen in Table 14, that antibody-peptide interactions approximate those between antibody and whole protein antigens, in terms of the surface areas buried upon complexation, the number of van der Waals' contacts and the number of hydrogen bonds formed. Details of the contact between B13I2 and a myohemerythrin-peptide homolog are included in Table 13 for comparison.

In the three anti-lysozymes, HyHEL-10, HyHEL-5 and D1.3, the surface that is used in the binding to antigen represents only 28.4, 26.5 and 21.4%, respectively, of the total surface formed by the CDRs; the CDR residues which contact the antigen represent only 35.8, 37.0 and 25.0% of the total number of CDR residues. The antibody-antigen contact utilizes primarily the central portion of the CDR surface in the three antilysozyme cases, and in all of the antibody-ligand structures determined so far.

The CDR residues involved in the contact with ligand in various antibody-ligand complexes of known structure are shown in Table 15. Many aromatic residues are seen to be involved in the contacts, whereas the involvement of small, apolar aliphatics is rare, a trend that was noted previously [Padlan (1990*a*); see also Mian *et al.* (1991)]. The ligand-contacting residues are seen to originate mostly from the C-terminal part of CDR1-L, the first and sometimes also the middle position in CDR2-L, from the whole of CDR3-L, CDR1-H and CDR3-H, and from the N-terminal part and the middle of CDR2-H. Thus, it is the central portion of the CDR surface (Fig. 4) that contacts the ligand in these, and possibly in all, antibody-antigen complexes.

The CDR3-L and CDR3-H are seen to play a prominent role, not only in ligand binding (Table 15), but also in the contact with the opposite domain (Table 8) and in the contact with the other CDRs (Table 6). It is probably no coincidence that these two CDR3s also usually display the greatest variability (Kabat *et al.*, 1991) and, in CDR3-H, the greatest variation in length and conformation (e.g. Wu *et al.*, 1993).

Although antigen binding primarily involves the CDRs, framework residues have been found on occasion to be involved also in the interaction with ligand. Thus the framework residue, Tyr49-L in D1.3 (Amit *et al.*, 1986; Fischmann *et al.*, 1991), and the Tyr49-L also in NC41 (Tulip *et al.*, 1992*a*), were found to be in contact with the antigen, as were the framework residues, Trp47-H in HyHEL-5 (Sheriff *et al.*, 1987) and Thr30-H in HyHEL-10 (Padlan *et al.*, 1989).

(ii) *The diversity of antigen-binding specificities*. The antigen-binding specificity of an antibody is defined by the physical and chemical properties of its CDR surface;

| Antibody               | Surf. buried | Ligand                   | Surf. buried | vdW | m.c.vdW | H.b. | m.c.H.b. | I.p. |
|------------------------|--------------|--------------------------|--------------|-----|---------|------|----------|------|
| McPC603 Fab            | 151          | Phosphocholine           | 138          | 54  | 4       | 3    |          | 2    |
| AN02 Fab               | 363          | DNP-spin-label           | 230          | 129 | 5       | 2    |          | 0    |
| 4-4-20 Fab             | 338          | Fluorescein              | 247          | 107 | 36      | 3    |          | 0    |
| BV04-01 Fab            | 523          | $d(pT)_3$                | 443          | 184 | 48      | 12   |          | 1    |
| B13I2 Fab              | 503          | Myohemerythrin peptide   | 439          | 113 | 27      | 13   | 2        | 2    |
| 17/9 Fab <sup>a1</sup> | 488          | Hemagglutinin<br>peptide | 418          | 143 | 36      | 14   | 1        | 1    |
| Fab <sup>a2</sup>      | 536          | Hemagglutinin<br>peptide | 459          | 154 | 34      | 13   | 1        | 1    |
| Fab <sup>b</sup>       | 488          | Hemagglutinin<br>peptide | 417          | 144 | 41      | 12   | 1        | 0    |
| D1.3 Fab               | 537          | Lysozyme                 | 541          | 110 | 18      | 14   | 2        | 0    |
| HyHEL-5 Fab            | 744          | Lysozyme                 | 741          | 145 | 25      | 13   | 0        | 3    |
| HyHEL-10 Fab           | 716          | Lysozyme                 | 759          | 180 | 21      | 19   | 1        | 0    |
| NC41 Fab               | 882          | Neuraminidase            | 838          | 154 | 20      | 13   | 1        | 0    |

Table 14. Various antibody-ligand interactions

<sup>a</sup>From PDB Entry: 1HIM (<sup>1</sup>first Fab in the entry; <sup>2</sup>second Fab in the entry).

<sup>b</sup>From PDB Entry: 1HIN.

The contacts involving main chain atoms (m.c.) are listed separately. See footnote to Table 4 for the definition of contacts.

Table 15. CDR residues in contact with ligand in murine and human antigen-binding regions of known three-dimensional structure

|          | CDR1-L            | CDR2-L  | CDR3-L     | CDR1-H | CDR2-H              | CDR3-H       |
|----------|-------------------|---------|------------|--------|---------------------|--------------|
|          | ***               | * *     | ** * *     | ***    | * * ** * *          | *            |
| HyHEL-10 | RASQSIGNNLH       | YASQSIS | QQSNSWP-YT | SDYWS- | YVSYSGSTYYNPSLKS    | WDGDY        |
|          | ** *              | *       | *** *      | * *    | * * ****            | ***          |
| HyHEL-5  | SASSSVNYMY        | DTSKLAS | QQWGRNPT   | DYWIE- | EILPGSGSTNYHERFKG   | GNYDFDG      |
|          | *                 | * *     | ***        | **     | * **                | ***          |
| D1.3     | RASGNIHNYLA       | YTTTLAD | QHFWSTP-RT | GYGVN- | MIWGDGNTDYNSALKS    | ERDYRLDY     |
|          |                   |         | ** * *     | *      | *                   | * *          |
| McPC603  | KSSQSLLNSGNQKNFLA | GASTRES | QNDHSYP-LT | DFYME- | ASRNKGNKYTTEYSASVKG | NYYGSTWYFDV  |
|          | * **              |         | * *        | *      | *                   | ***          |
| 4-4-20   | RSSQSLVHS-QGNTYLR | KVSNRFS | SQSTHVP-WT | DYWMN- | QIRNKPYNYETYYSDSVKG | SYYGMDY      |
|          | * *               | *       | * * *      |        |                     | **           |
| AN02     | SASSSVYYMY        | DTSNLAS | QQWSSYPPIT | SDYAWN | YMSYSGSTRYNPSLRS    | GWPLAY       |
|          | * * *             |         | * * *      | * *    | *** * ** *          | * **         |
| B1312®   | RSNQTILLS-DGDTYLE | KVSNRFS | FQGSHVP-PT | RCAMS- | GISSGGSYTFYPDTVKG   | YSSDPF.¥F-DY |
|          | ** **             |         | ****       | * * *  | * ** *              | *****        |
| BV04-01  | RSSQSLVHS-NGNTYLH | KVSNRFS | SQSTHVP-LT | TNAMN- | RIRSKSNNYATYYADSVKD | DQTGTAWF-AY  |
|          | *                 |         | **** *     |        | * ** **** *         | *** *        |
| 17/94    | TSSQSLFNSGKQKNYLT | WASTRES | QNDYSNP-LT | SYGMS- | TISNGGGYTYYPDSVKG   | RERYDENGFAY  |
|          |                   | * * **  | ** * *     | **     | * *                 | **** **      |
| NC41     | KASQDVSTAVV       | WASTRHI | QQHYSPP-WT | NYGMN- | WINTNTGEPTYGEEFKG   | GEDNFGSL-DY  |

<sup>@</sup> From PDB Entry: 2IGF.

# From PDB Entry: 1HIM (first Fab in the entry).

See footnote to Table 4 for the definition of contacts.

these in turn are determined by the conformation of the individual CDRs, by the relative disposition of the CDRs, and by the nature and disposition of the side chains of the amino acids in the CDRs. Thus, the pronounced structural variability in the CDRs, which is due not only to sequence variability, but also to the insertions and deletions frequently found in these segments, and the possible pairing of different  $V_{I}$  and  $V_{H}$ provide a ready explanation for the wide diversity of antigen-binding specificities. Within each CDR, there are residue positions that are more hypervariable than others; these positions are presumably more involved in the determination of antigen-binding specificity and in the diversification of specificities. The other residues in the CDRs may play an ancillary role and simply provide additional "stickiness" (see below). In addition, the more conserved residues in the CDRs may play a structural role and serve to stabilize the combining-site structure (Kabat et al., 1977; Padlan, 1977b).

The possibility of "induced fit" provides an additional means of generating other specificities, but in this case without introducing any new ingredients into the picture. "Induced fit" can be achieved by small movements of side chains, or by more substantial structural modifications like the deformation of the CDR loops, or by a change in the relative disposition of the variable domains. The flexibility of the combining site, which allows the occurrence of "induced fit" necessarily results in the entropic loss upon complexation, but the greater interaction due to a more precise fit may result in an overall increase in binding energy.

Evidence is accumulating which suggests that any macromolecule, if presented properly, can be antigenic and, further, that all accessible areas of a macromolecule can potentially be bound by antibody [see Benjamin *et al.* (1984) for a review]. Moreover, there appear to be no special structural requirements for antigenicity (Padlan,

1992). If antibody combining sites are to participate in strong interactions with many possible antigenic structures, they must possess structural features which make them especially suited for interacting with ligands.

A survey (Padlan, 1990a) of the then available primary and three-dimensional data on the CDRs revealed that Tyr, His and Asn have a propensity for being in the CDRs. Moreover, although the exposure patterns of the various amino acid types in immunoglobulins are comparable to those in other water-soluble proteins, those with aromatic side chains are more exposed when in CDRs than when in the framework regions. Those results are confirmed when the now larger structural database on combining-site structures is analysed. The solvent accessibilities of the side chains in various Fv fragments of known three-dimensional structure are presented in Table 16a; the solvent exposures of the CDR and framework residues are presented separately in Tables 16b and 16c, respectively. For comparison, the solvent accessibilities of the side chains in 50 highlyrefined structures of water-soluble proteins (Padlan, 1990a) are provided in Table 17.

Again, Trp and Tyr are found to be more buried when in the framework and more exposed when in the CDRs than in water-soluble proteins in general (Fig. 11); phenylalanines also seem to be following the trend. The Trp, Tyr and Phe in the framework regions of antibody variable domains are usually found in the interdomain interface (Fig. 5) and in the domain interiors [see also Poljak *et al.* (1975*a*), Davies *et al.* (1975*b*) and Novotny *et al.* (1983)]. When in the CDRs, these aromatic residues are frequently found to be involved in the interaction with ligand (see above and Fig. 10).

Amino acids with aromatic side chains can contribute significantly to ligand binding because of their large size (for greater hydrophobic effect), their large polarizabilities (for greater contribution to the van der Waals'

 
 Table 16a. Exposure of residues in murine and human Fvs of known three-dimensional structure

|       | Bu   | mB  | pВ  | mE  | Ex   | Total |
|-------|------|-----|-----|-----|------|-------|
| ALA   | 111  | 21  | 17  | 16  | 75   | 240   |
| ARG   | 37   | 40  | 31  | 45  | 32   | 185   |
| ASN   | 23   | 13  | 30  | 50  | 30   | 146   |
| ASP   | 45   | 17  | 32  | 49  | 61   | 204   |
| CYS   | 82   | 0   | 1   | 0   | 0    | 83    |
| GLN   | 67   | 48  | 16  | 63  | 67   | 261   |
| GLU   | 19   | 3   | 21  | 59  | 56   | 158   |
| GLY   | 117  | 0   | 0   | 0   | 329  | 446   |
| HIS   | 9    | 1   | 12  | 5   | 6    | 33    |
| ILE   | 122  | 19  | 17  | 7   | 12   | 177   |
| LEU   | 227  | 34  | 37  | 27  | 26   | 351   |
| LYS   | 4    | 7   | 24  | 87  | 84   | 206   |
| MET   | 59   | 5   | 8   | 5   | 0    | 77    |
| PHE   | 118  | 14  | 12  | 7   | 3    | 154   |
| PRO   | 25   | 10  | 30  | 76  | 43   | 184   |
| SER   | 32   | 21  | 49  | 167 | 334  | 603   |
| THR   | 46   | 36  | 82  | 132 | 91   | 387   |
| TRP   | 85   | 10  | 9   | 5   | 0    | 109   |
| TYR   | 114  | 54  | 55  | 35  | 15   | 273   |
| VAL   | 162  | 53  | 21  | 16  | 28   | 280   |
| Total | 1504 | 406 | 504 | 851 | 1292 | 4557  |

interaction), and their ability to hydrogen bond [through their aromatic rings (Levitt and Perutz, 1988) or through polar atoms in their side chain], and, very importantly, because of their relative rigidity since they have few degrees of freedom (for lesser loss of conformational entropy upon complexation).

On the other hand, the apolar, aliphatic side chains of Val, Ile and Leu are incapable of participating in ionic interactions. They can contribute to ligand binding only through van der Waals' interactions and the hydrophobic effect. Moreover, in view of their rotational degrees of freedom which could be frozen upon complex formation, they can have a significant negative contribution to ligand binding (Novotny *et al.*, 1989; Padlan, 1990*a*).

It should also be noted that asparagines are more buried when in the CDRs than when in the framework. In the CDRs, the asparagines are found to be often involved in hydrogen bonds, many to main chain atoms. It was argued (Padlan, 1990*a*) that these asparagines serve to help stabilize the CDR loops (the main stabilizing factor would be the strong architecture of the domain framework) and permit the exposure of the hydrophobic aromatics, which otherwise would tend to be buried in the domain interior.

Thus the high incidence of exposed aromatic residues, as well as the paucity of apolar, aliphatic side chains, on part of its surface would give an antibody a "sticky patch" and give the molecule the capacity to bind diverse ligands. Specificity for a particular antigen would arise from the precise complementarity of the interacting surfaces and the correct positioning of complementary polar, esp. charged, groups on those surfaces (Levy *et al.*, 1989). (iii) Possible structural correlates of polyreactivity. The affinity of polyreactive antibodies for the antigens to which they bind is rather low, with affinity constants ranging from  $10^{-4}$  to  $10^{-7}$  M (to be contrasted with monoreactive antibodies which show affinities for their specific ligands of  $10^{-7}$  M or better) [see, for example, Burastero *et al.* (1988)]. Binding to many different ligands with low affinity may simply reflect the intrinsic stickiness of the antibody that has been designated as being monospecific is actually capable of interacting with many different ligands, but that we are aware of only that one ligand for which the affinity is significantly higher than for the rest.

It should be pointed out that a 10-fold increase in affinity requires an improvement in the binding interaction of only 1.37 kcal/mole at room temperature which corresponds roughly to the energy of a hydrogen bond; a 1000-fold increase in affinity corresponds to an energy difference of 4.12 kcal/mole, or roughly the energy associated with a hydrogen bond that involves a charged group (Fersht *et al.*, 1985); the energies associated with salt bridges are difficult to estimate, but these would normally be higher and lead to greater increases in affinity than hydrogen bonds. This means that the difference in the reactivity patterns of polyreactive and monospecific antibodies may simply be a reflection of a single amino-acid difference.

Nevertheless, the concept of polyreactivity is intriguing and the existence of polyreactive natural antibodies clearly provides an organism the ability to cope, albeit weakly, with a deleterious antigen that it had not previously encountered (a better defense against subsequent antigenic challenge is then achieved by

Table 16b. Exposure of CDR residues in murine and human antigen-binding regions of known three-dimensional structure

|       | Bu  | mB  | pВ  | mE  | Ex  | Total     |
|-------|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----------|
| ALA   | 31  | 12  | 10  | 3   | 12  | 68        |
| ARG   | 6   | 6   | 12  | 18  | 7   | 49        |
| ASN   | 22  | 10  | 19  | 22  | 18  | 91        |
| ASP   | 9   | 10  | 17  | 22  | 21  | <b>79</b> |
| CYS   | 2   | 0   | 1   | 0   | 0   | 3         |
| GLN   | 28  | 4   | 3   | 9   | 12  | 56        |
| GLU   | 6   | 3   | 7   | 4   | 5   | 25        |
| GLY   | 22  | 0   | 0   | 0   | 76  | 98        |
| HIS   | 8   | 1   | 12  | 3   | 1   | 25        |
| ILE   | 29  | 3   | 6   | 2   | 2   | 42        |
| LEU   | 30  | 5   | 20  | 4   | 3   | 62        |
| LYS   | 0   | 2   | 7   | 16  | 19  | 44        |
| MET   | 16  | 1   | 0   | 2   | 0   | 19        |
| PHE   | 16  | 8   | 8   | 5   | 1   | 38        |
| PRO   | 7   | 10  | 5   | 14  | 6   | 42        |
| SER   | 27  | 12  | 20  | 59  | 71  | 189       |
| THR   | 11  | 15  | 31  | 20  | 4   | 81        |
| TRP   | 6   | 8   | 9   | 5   | 0   | 28        |
| TYR   | 13  | 36  | 39  | 35  | 15  | 138       |
| VAL   | 24  | 9   | 2   | 3   | 4   | 42        |
| Total | 313 | 155 | 228 | 246 | 277 | 1219      |

Table 16c. Exposure of framework residues in murine and human antigen-binding regions of known three-dimensional structure

| <u> </u> |      |     |     |     |      |       |
|----------|------|-----|-----|-----|------|-------|
|          | Bu   | mB  | pВ  | mE  | Ex   | Total |
| ALA      | 80   | 9   | 7   | 13  | 63   | 172   |
| ARG      | 31   | 34  | 19  | 27  | 25   | 136   |
| ASN      | 1    | 3   | 11  | 28  | 12   | 55    |
| ASP      | 36   | 7   | 15  | 27  | 40   | 125   |
| CYS      | 80   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 0    | 80    |
| GLN      | 39   | 44  | 13  | 54  | 55   | 205   |
| GLU      | 13   | 0   | 14  | 55  | 51   | 133   |
| GLY      | 95   | 0   | 0   | 0   | 253  | 348   |
| HIS      | 1    | 0   | 0   | 2   | 5    | 8     |
| ILE      | 93   | 16  | 11  | 5   | 10   | 135   |
| LEU      | 197  | 29  | 17  | 23  | 23   | 289   |
| LYS      | 4    | 5   | 17  | 71  | 65   | 162   |
| MET      | 43   | 4   | 8   | 3   | 0    | 58    |
| PHE      | 102  | 6   | 4   | 2   | 2    | 116   |
| PRO      | 18   | 0   | 25  | 62  | 37   | 142   |
| SER      | 5    | 9   | 29  | 108 | 263  | 414   |
| THR      | 35   | 21  | 51  | 112 | 87   | 306   |
| TRP      | 79   | 2   | 0   | 0   | 0    | 81    |
| TYR      | 101  | 18  | 16  | 0   | 0    | 135   |
| VAL      | 138  | 44  | 19  | 13  | 24   | 238   |
| Total    | 1191 | 251 | 276 | 605 | 1015 | 3338  |

The fractional solvent accessibility values for the individual residues were computed as described by Padlan (1990*a*); residues, the sidechains of which have fractional accessibility values between 0.00 and 0.20, are designated as being completely buried (Bu), between 0.20 and 0.40 as mostly buried (mB), between 0.40 and 0.60 as partly buried/partly exposed (pB), between 0.60 and 0.80 as mostly exposed (mE), and at least 0.80 as completely exposed (Ex). In the special case of glycine, the residue is considered completely exposed if its  $\alpha$ -carbon atom is accessible to solvent, otherwise it is considered completely buried. Here, residue exposures are defined in the context of an isolated Fv. The unliganded forms of McPC603, BV04-01, B13I2 (PDB Entry: 11GF, first Fab in the entry) and 17/9 (PDB Entry: 1HIL, first Fab in the entry) were used in the computations.

affinity maturation). Several factors may contribute to polyreactivity and these are discussed below. Which, if any, can account for polyreactivity in antibodies may become obvious when sufficient structural data on these molecules become available.

It is possible, for example, that different areas of the antibody CDR surface are used for different antigens. In the case of the three anti-lysozymes examined above, less than a third of the CDR surface is utilized in the binding to the antigen so that many other antibody-ligand interactions can be envisioned. In addition, more of the framework residues could be recruited for involvement in the binding interaction.

A close fit between antibody and antigen is a feature of tight binding, and this may not be the case for polyreactivity. Departures from a close fit could lead to the presence of cavities in the interface, which is energetically expensive and will result in lower affinity. An imprecise fit between antibody combining site and antigenic determinant could be smoothed out by solvent molecules, but the immobilization of solvent molecules will result in a decrease in the entropy of the system and subtract from the total binding energy, again leading to lower affinity.

It may be that the combining site structure of a polyreactive antibody is unusually plastic so that the site could adopt many different conformations enabling it to accommodate many different antigenic structures. The plasticity of the combining site structure is mainly dependent on the deformability of the CDR loop structures and on the ability of  $V_L$  and  $V_H$  to assume different quaternary modes of association. The deformability of the CDRs will depend on their length and on the presence or absence of stabilizing interactions with neighboring structures, as well as on the presence or absence in these regions of certain amino acid types like glycine (which usually confers flexibility), proline (which usually confers rigidity), or asparagine (which, by hydrogen bonding to main chain atoms, contributes to the stability of the local structure). Greater plasticity, therefore, may be reflected in a more frequent occurrence of glycines and/or a reduced presence of prolines or asparagines. In this regard, it is interesting that, of the three possible reading frames, the one used to transcribe the D-gene segment is usually that which results in the presence of glycines in the CDR3-H (Abergel and Claverie, 1991).

It is also possible that a polyreactive combining site is unusually sticky, as a consequence of the presence or absence of certain amino acid types which give the site a greater capacity for binding ligands. Greater stickiness

 Table 17. Exposure of amino acid residues in 50 highly-refined

 water-soluble protein structures

|       | Bu   | mB   | pB   | mE   | Ex   | Total |
|-------|------|------|------|------|------|-------|
| ALA   | 309  | 79   | 97   | 117  | 199  | 801   |
| ARG   | 21   | 42   | 83   | 80   | 50   | 276   |
| ASN   | 49   | 52   | 99   | 123  | 145  | 468   |
| ASP   | 69   | 53   | 79   | 113  | 151  | 465   |
| CYS   | 174  | 46   | 26   | 12   | 1    | 259   |
| GLN   | 39   | 47   | 61   | 106  | 91   | 344   |
| GLU   | 30   | 33   | 72   | 132  | 127  | 394   |
| GLY   | 291  | 0    | 0    | 0    | 635  | 926   |
| HIS   | 63   | 39   | 41   | 23   | 25   | 191   |
| ILE   | 273  | 85   | 62   | 22   | 8    | 450   |
| LEU   | 372  | 121  | 70   | 43   | 22   | 628   |
| LYS   | 10   | 29   | 91   | 194  | 187  | 511   |
| MET   | 88   | 20   | 17   | 13   | 6    | 144   |
| PHE   | 177  | 70   | 42   | 8    | 8    | 305   |
| PRO   | 81   | 32   | 54   | 86   | 109  | 362   |
| SER   | 156  | 74   | 79   | 145  | 293  | 747   |
| THR   | 140  | 68   | 123  | 145  | 135  | 611   |
| TRP   | 68   | 44   | 14   | 7    | 3    | 136   |
| TYR   | 106  | 113  | 74   | 48   | 20   | 361   |
| VAL   | 385  | 101  | 84   | 61   | 36   | 667   |
| Total | 2915 | 1157 | 1268 | 1478 | 2251 | 9069  |

Here, a structure is considered to be a highly-refined structure if it has been determined to a resolution of 1.8 Å or better and refined to a crystallographic R-value of 0.200 or better. See footnote to Table 16.



Fig. 11. Histograms showing the exposure patterns of the Trp (a) and Tyr (b) residues in antigen-binding regions of known three-dimensional structure. Shown are the numbers of these residues which are completely buried (Bu), mostly buried (mB), partly buried (pB), mostly exposed (mE) and completely exposed (Ex), as enumerated in Table 16.

may be reflected in an increased presence of aromatics vs aliphatic residues, for example. The observation that some polyreactive antibodies have many charged residues in and around their CDRs (Gonzalez-Quintial *et al.*, 1990) is intriguing.

#### Fc-ligand interactions

A number of molecules are known to bind to Fc, including low- and high-affinity Fc receptors, C1q and Protein A. For these, the location of their binding sites on the Fc has been deduced by sequence correlations, chemical modifications and site-directed mutagenesis, and, in the case of Protein A, by direct crystallographic analysis. Duncan *et al.* (1988), by site-directed mutagenesis, have shown that Leu235 (Eu numbering) is a major determinant in the binding of murine Fc to the high-affinity receptor on monocytes. Unfortunately, the corresponding residue is part of the stretch that is disordered in the crystal structure of human IgG1 Fc and, therefore, cannot be located in that structure. The recent crystal structure analysis of the intact murine IgG2a antibody (Harris *et al.*, 1992), in which the full hinge is visible, should help in delineating the receptor-binding site on IgG.

It is known that C1q binds to the  $C_H 2$  domain and numerous attempts have been made to localize the site of binding [reviewed by Burton (1985)]. Recently, by systematically altering residues that are expected to lie on the surface, Duncan and Winter (1988) have been able to propose the location of the minimal residues that are probably involved in the binding of C1q; these are residues 318, 320 and 322 (Eu numbering). In human IgG1, these residues lie on the outside face of C $\gamma$ 2 (Fig. 12) and their disposition will allow a direct contact with C1q.

The crystallographic analysis of the binding of Fragment B of Protein A to human IgG1 Fc (Deisenhofer, 1981) demonstrated that the Protein A binding site is at the junction of the C $\gamma$ 2 and C $\gamma$ 3 domains (Fig. 12). Both domains are involved in the contact and approximately 1200 Å of accessible surface area on the Fc and the ligand are buried by the interaction. The contact is mainly hydrophobic with a few hydrogen bonds.

#### STRUCTURAL ASPECTS OF ANTIBODY APPLICATIONS

Antibodies of predefined specificity have many potential uses in industry and in medicine [see, for example, Steinman (1990), Schlom (1991), Waldmann (1991) and Co and Queen (1991)] and the advent of hybridoma technology (Koehler and Milstein, 1975) has made possible the generation of virtually limitless amounts of such antibodies. Monoclonal antibodies are being used for



Fig. 12. Stereodrawing of the  $\alpha$ -carbon trace of human IgG1 Fc showing various binding sites. The orientation is as in Fig. 7. Fragment B of Protein A is shown as the tri-helical structure near the junction of the C<sub>H</sub>2 and C<sub>H</sub>3 domains. Residues 318, 320 and 322, which have been identified as being involved in C1q binding (Duncan and Winter, 1988), are indicated by large, filled circles on C<sub>H</sub>2.

imaging purposes in diagnosis [see, for example, Colcher *et al.* (1988), Schlom *et al.*, (1991)], and in therapy by targeting specific tissues or cells and by delivering toxins or radioactivity to predetermined locations [see, for example, Chaudary *et al.* (1988), and Schlom (1991)].

Furthermore, in view of the similarity in structure of antibodies belonging to the different classes and isotypes, the structure of a particular antibody could be manipulated to generate new functions or to endow it with a desired reactivity. For example, it may be possible, through the construction of chimeric IgE molecules of pre-selected specificity, to harness the cytotoxic potential of the IgE-isotypic response mediated by the low-affinity receptor for IgE and effect the killing of tumor cells and parasites by inflammatory cells (Helm, 1989).

Another important application is the use of antibodies as enzymes. It was proposed (Jencks, 1969) that catalytic antibodies could be generated by the use of transitionstate analogs as immunogens, and a number of such antibodies have been produced [see, for example, Lerner and Tramontano (1988), Schultz (1988) and Benkovic (1992)]. This opens the possibility of generating enzymes for chemical reactions for which no natural catalysts exist.

Monoclonal antibodies are still more easily obtained from nonhuman sources, usually rodent, and the use of those antibodies in human subjects will be hindered by the patients' immune system. Since the reduction of the immunogenicity in humans of xenogeneic antibodies will make those molecules more efficacious reagents in therapy and diagnosis, various procedures for "humanizing" nonhuman antibodies are being developed.

# Structural considerations in the "humanization" of antibodies

Ideally, "humanization" should result in an antibody that is nonimmunogenic, with complete retention of the antigen-binding properties of the original molecule. However, in order to retain all the antigen-binding properties of the original antibody, the structure of its combining-site has to be faithfully reproduced in the "humanized" version. This could be achieved by transplanting the combining site of the nonhuman antibody onto a human framework, either (a) by grafting the entire nonhuman variable domains onto human constant regions (Morrison et al., 1984; Morrison and Oi, 1988) (which preserves the ligand-binding properties, but which also retains the immunogenicity of the nonhuman variable domains); (b) by grafting only the nonhuman CDRs onto human framework and constant regions (Jones et al., 1986; Verhoeyen et al., 1988); or (c) by transplanting the entire nonhuman variable domains (to preserve ligand-binding properties) but also "cloaking" them with a human-like surface through judicious replacement of exposed residues (to reduce antigenicity) (Padlan, 1991).

(i) "Humanization" by CDR-grafting. "Humanization" by transplanting only the CDRs (Jones *et al.*, 1986; Verhoeyen *et al.*, 1988) should result in almost complete elimination of immunogenicity (except if allotypic or idiotypic differences exist). However, it is found that in order to recover the ligand-binding properties of the original molecule, some framework residues from the original antibody, those which influence the structure of the combining site, also need to be preserved [see, for example, Riechmann *et al.* (1988), and Queen *et al.* (1989)].

In theory, all the framework residues which could influence the structure of the combining site should be kept. These include those which are in contact with the CDRs, since they provide the primary support for the combining site structure, and those which are involved in the  $V_L$ - $V_H$  contact, since they influence the relative disposition of the CDRs. It may be necessary to keep also those framework residues which are buried in the domain interior, since they could influence the overall domain structure and, thereby, the structure of the combining site. Further, if the interaction with antigen involves "induced fit", the structural elements which permit the conformational change(s) must also be preserved in the "humanized" molecule.

The important framework residues could be identified if the three-dimensional structure of the antibody is known, preferably in a complex with antigen. In the absence of three-dimensional structure, the identification of the important framework residues could be attempted by other means, for example, by modeling the combining site structure (e.g. Queen *et al.*, 1989; Carter *et al.*, 1992), or by studying the effect of framework mutations on the ligand-binding properties of the molecule (e.g. Tempest *et al.*, 1991; Foote and Winter, 1992). Useful hints can be obtained from an examination of the known antibody structures.

The framework residues, which probably play a role in maintaining the combining site structure are presented in Tables 18–21 for the murine antibodies of known structure. The framework residues in the  $V_L$  domains, the side chains of which contact CDR residues, are listed in Table 18; those in the  $V_H$  are listed in Table 19. The framework residues, which contact framework residues in the opposite domain and which influence the quaternary structure of the Fv, have already been identified (Table 8). The buried, inward-pointing, framework residues in the  $V_L$ , i.e. those which are located in the domain interior, are listed in Table 20; those in the  $V_H$ are listed in Table 21. These results are collected in Table 22 for  $V_L$  and in Table 23 for  $V_H$ .

It is seen that there are many framework residues that contact the CDRs, that contact the opposite domain and that are found in the domain interior. These framework residues, which could influence the structure of the combining site and thus the antigen-binding characteristics of an antibody, are different from antibody to antibody, although many are common to all.

If one of the murine antibodies listed in the tables were to be "humanized" by CDR-grafting with the view to preserving their ligand-binding properties, it would probably be wise to retain all of its framework residues that are listed in Tables 22 and 23. At first glance, it would appear that there would be too many nonhuman

|                                   |  |                              | -                             |                             |                       |                    |                         |                        |                     |                       |                         |                        |                         |                      |                      |
|-----------------------------------|--|------------------------------|-------------------------------|-----------------------------|-----------------------|--------------------|-------------------------|------------------------|---------------------|-----------------------|-------------------------|------------------------|-------------------------|----------------------|----------------------|
|                                   |  |                              |                               |                             |                       |                    | Antik                   | yody                   |                     |                       |                         |                        |                         |                      |                      |
| Position                          | J539                                   | McPC603                      | HyHEL-10                      | HyHEL-5                     | R19.9                 | 4-4-20             | BV04-01                 | 36-71                  | <b>B</b> 1312       | D1.3                  | Yst9-1                  | AN02                   | 17/9                    | 8F5                  | NC41                 |
| 1                                 | E (2)                                  | D (5)                        | D (10)                        | D (3)                       | D (5)                 | D (8)              |                         | D (4)                  | D (5)               | D (11)                | D (5)                   | Q (5)                  | D(1)                    | D (5)                | D (5)                |
| 2                                 | I (11)                                 | I (15)                       | I (18)                        | I (18)                      | I (20)                | V (12)             | V (9)                   | I (21)                 | (L) A               | I (12)                | I (25)                  | I (17)                 | I (15)                  | I (13)               | I (16)               |
| ŝ                                 |  | V (3)                        | V (2)                         | V (3)                       | Q (20)                | V (2)              |                         | Q (2)                  | L(I)                |                       | Q (2)                   | V (2)                  | V (2)                   | (I) A                | V (3)                |
| 4                                 | L (13)                                 | (11) W                       | L (12)                        | L (17)                      | M (14)                | M (18)             | M (12)                  | (6) W                  | (9) W               | M (12)                | (6) W                   | L (14)                 | M (11)                  | ( <i>1</i> ) W       | M (8)                |
| 5                                 |  | T (3)                        | T (1)                         |                             | T (1)                 | T (3)              | T (2)                   |                        |                     | T (1)                 | T (1)                   | T (2)                  | T (4)                   | T (4)                | T (2)                |
| 7                                 |  |                              |                               |                             | T (3)                 |                    |                         |                        | T(1)                |                       |                         |                        |                         |                      |                      |
| 22                                |  |                              |                               |                             |                       |                    |                         |                        |                     |                       |                         |                        |                         | T (4)                |                      |
| 23                                | C (3)                                  | C (3)                        | C (4)                         | C (4)                       | C (3)                 | C (3)              | C (2)                   | C (3)                  | C (3)               | C (1)                 | C (3)                   | C (5)                  | C (5)                   | C (3)                |                      |
| 35                                | W (8)                                  | W (6)                        | W (7)                         | W (8)                       | W (8)                 | W (5)              | W (6)                   | W (10)                 | W (7)               | W (10)                | (6) M                   | W (6)                  | W (7)                   | W (7)                | W (3)                |
| 36                                | Y (17)                                 | Y (21)                       | Y (12)                        | Y (10)                      | Y (19)                | Y (13)             | Y (10)                  | Y (19)                 | Y (14)              | Y (18)                | Y (8)                   | Y (17)                 | Y (21)                  | Y (10)               | Y (11)               |
| 45                                |  |                              |                               |                             | K (5)                 | K (5)              |                         |                        |                     |                       |                         |                        |                         |                      |                      |
| 46                                | P (8)                                  | L (9)                        | L (4)                         | <b>R</b> (21)               | L (8)                 | V (15)             | L (12)                  | L (8)                  | L (12)              | L (9)                 | L (7)                   | L (9)                  | V (5)                   | L (14)               | L (8)                |
| 48                                | I (10)                                 | I (11)                       | I (11)                        | I (12)                      | I (11)                | I (9)              | I (10)                  | I (13)                 | I (10)              | V (9)                 | I (13)                  | I (13)                 | I (9)                   | I(11)                | I (2)                |
| 49                                | Y (36)                                 | Y (33)                       | K (17)                        | Y (18)                      | Y (31)                | Y (29)             | Y (31)                  | Y (30)                 | Y (28)              | Y (29)                | Y (32)                  | Y (27)                 | Y (37)                  | Y (34)               | Y (14)               |
| 58                                | V (8)                                  | V (6)                        | 1 (6)                         | V (11)                      | (/) <b>N</b>          | V (9)              | V (12)                  | V (4)                  | V (8)               | V (6)                 | V (9)                   | V (9)                  | V (8)                   | V (10)               | V (4)                |
| 60                                |  | D(1)                         |                               |                             |                       | D (2)              |                         |                        | D(I)                |                       |                         | V (I)                  | D(2)                    | D (4)                | D (2)                |
| 62                                |  |                              |                               | F (1)                       | F(1)                  | F(1)               | F(1)                    | F(I)                   |                     |                       |                         | F(1)                   |                         |                      |                      |
| 63                                |  |                              |                               |                             |                       |                    |                         |                        | S (1)               |                       |                         |                        |                         | T (1)                |                      |
| 67                                |  | S (3)                        | S (2)                         |                             |                       |                    |                         |                        |                     | S (1)                 |                         |                        | S (2)                   | S (4)                |                      |
| 69                                | T (5)                                  | T (9)                        | T (8)                         | T (2)                       | T (8)                 | T (14)             | T (7)                   | T (8)                  | T (4)               | T (9)                 | T (9)                   | T (10)                 | T (4)                   | T (6)                |                      |
| 70                                |  | D (2)                        |                               |                             | D (3)                 |                    | D (2)                   | D (6)                  | D (6)               |                       | D (9)                   |                        | D(1)                    |                      |                      |
| 11                                | Y (14)                                 | F (23)                       | F (23)                        | Y (23)                      | Y (21)                | F(17)              | F (28)                  | Y (21)                 | F (21)              | Y (25)                | Y (25)                  | Y (12)                 | F (16)                  | F (14)               | Y (13)               |
| 88                                | C (4)                                  | C (3)                        | C (3)                         | C (2)                       | C (3)                 | C (3)              | C (2)                   | C (2)                  | C (2)               | C (5)                 | C (4)                   | C (4)                  | C (6)                   | C (2)                | C (1)                |
| 98                                | F (11)                                 | F (15)                       | F (13)                        | F (7)                       | F (14)                | F (12)             | F (14)                  | F (12)                 | F(17)               | F (17)                | F (14)                  | F (17)                 | F (10)                  | F (16)               | F (6)                |
| The number<br>4 for th<br>compute | er in paren<br>e definition<br>utions. | theses after<br>n of contact | each residue<br>ts. The ligan | name corres<br>ded forms of | sponds to<br>f McPC6( | the num<br>3, BV04 | ber of atc<br>-01, B13Ľ | omic cont<br>2 and 17/ | acts in w<br>9 (PDB | hich the<br>Entry: 1F | amino aci<br>IIM, first | id is invo<br>Fab in 1 | lved. See<br>the entry) | footnote<br>were use | to Table<br>d in the |

Table 18.  $V_L$  framework residues that contact CDR residues in murine Fabs of known three-dimensional structure

|             |              | Table 19. V    | <sub>H</sub> framework | residues that | at contact   | CDR re         | ssidues in         | murine F | abs of ki     | nown thr | ce-dimens     | ional stru    | icture   |              |        |
|-------------|--------------|----------------|------------------------|---------------|--------------|----------------|--------------------|----------|---------------|----------|---------------|---------------|----------|--------------|--------|
|             |              |                |                        |               |              |                | Antit              | ody      |               |          |               |               | ç<br>t   |              |        |
| Position    | J539         | McPC603        | HyHEL-10               | HyHEL-5       | R19.9        | 4-4-20         | BV04-01            | 36-71    | B1312         | D1.3     | YST9-1        | AN02          | 17/9     | 8F5          | NC41   |
| 1           |              |                |                        |               |              |                | E (3)              | E(3)     |               |          | E (2)         |               |          |              |        |
| 7           | V (11)       | V (3)          | V (8)                  |               | V (3)        |                |                    | V (7)    | V (13)        | V (12)   | V (3)         |               | V (11)   | V (10)       | I (6)  |
| 4           | L (3)        | L (6)          | L (5)                  | L (2)         | L(I)         | L (3)          |                    | L (3)    | L (3)         | L (4)    | r ()          | L (5)         | L (4)    | r (/)        | L (2)  |
| 22          |              |                |                        |               |              |                |                    |          |               |          |               |               |          |              | C (2)  |
| 24          |              | T (2)          | (9) A                  |               |              | A (I)          | A (1)              |          |               |          | T (1)         | V (5)         |          |              | A (1)  |
| 27          | F (3)        | F (2)          |                        | Y (14)        | Y (7)        | F (26)         | F (2)              | Y (4)    | F (2)         | F (4)    | F (8)         | Y (16)        | F (8)    | F (15)       | Y (4)  |
| 28          | D (9)        | T (6)          |                        | T (3)         | T (4)        | T (6)          | S(I)               | T (2)    | T (7)         |          | T (8)         | S(I)          | S (3)    |              |        |
| 29          | F (4)        | F (4)          |                        | F (10)        | F (6)        | F (13)         | F (4)              | F (6)    | F (5)         | T(I)     | F (4)         | 1(7)          | F (2)    | 1(5)         | F (6)  |
| 30          | S (2)        | S (1)          | T (4)                  | S (3)         | T (9)        | S (9)          | $\mathbf{N}^{(1)}$ | T (4)    | S (1)         | T (2)    | T (10)        | T (2)         | S (1)    | K (1)        | T (1)  |
| 36          | W (4)        | W (3)          | (9) M                  | W (5)         | (9) M        | ( <i>L</i> ) M | W (4)              | W (8)    | W (4)         | W (6)    | W (4)         | W (3)         | W (3)    | W (8)        |        |
| 37          | ,<br>,       | (I) <b>N</b>   | ,                      | ,<br>,        | (I) <b>N</b> | /              | V (I)              |          | V (4)         | (I) A    |               | I (4)         | V (2)    |              |        |
| 38          | <b>R</b> (1) | R (2)          | R (4)                  | K (2)         | K (2)        | R (4)          | R (1)              | K (2)    | R (1)         |          |               | R (1)         |          |              | K (4)  |
| 40          |              |                |                        | R (1)         |              |                |                    |          |               |          |               |               |          |              |        |
| 46          | E(3)         | E (4)          | E(I)                   | E (27)        | E (7)        | E (4)          | E (2)              | E (9)    |               | E (I)    |               | E (2)         |          | E (4)        | E (7)  |
| 47          | W (34)       | W (46)         | Y (22)                 | W (22)        | W (36)       | W (31)         | W (34)             | W (36)   | W (25)        | W (36)   | W (28)        | W (37)        | W (42)   | W (37)       | (19) M |
| 48          | I(1)         | I(I)           | (9) W                  | I (12)        | I (8)        | (I) λ          | V (4)              | (6)1     | V (2)         | T(I)     | T(1)          | M (3)         |          | I(I)         | M (10) |
| 49          |              | A (4)          |                        |               |              | A (3)          | A (5)              |          | A (3)         |          |               |               | A (4)    |              |        |
| 66          | K (2)        | R (3)          | R (16)                 | K (1)         | K (2)        | R (8)          | R (8)              | K (I)    | R (5)         | R (3)    | <b>R</b> (2)  | R (3)         | R (8)    | K (3)        |        |
| 67          | F (6)        | F (10)         | 1 (9)                  | A (1)         | T (7)        | F (13)         | F (5)              | T (8)    | F (10)        | L (10)   | F (9)         | I (10)        | F (6)    | A (5)        | F (9)  |
| 68          |              | 1(1)           |                        |               |              | T (11)         |                    |          |               |          | T (1)         | S(I)          | T (3)    |              |        |
| 69          | I (9)        | ( <i>L</i> ) A | I (12)                 | F (16)        | L (12)       | I (25)         | I (19)             | L (9)    | I (12)        | I (9)    | I (9)         | I (10)        | I (19)   | I (12)       | F (16) |
| 71          | R (27)       | R (28)         | R (7)                  | A (4)         | V (2)        | R (13)         | R (28)             | V (7)    | <b>R</b> (21) | K (9)    | R (23)        | <b>R</b> (23) | R (21)   | V (4)        | L (6)  |
| 73          | N (3)        | T (3)          |                        |               | R (3)        | D(3)           | D(I)               | K (2)    | N (1)         |          | E<br>z        |               | (I)<br>N | T(I)         |        |
| 78          | L (5)        | L (7)          | Y (15)                 | A (1)         | A (1)        | V (2)          | L (3)              | A (I)    | L (5)         | V (4)    | L (3)         | F(11)         | L (6)    | A (2)        | A (2)  |
| 80          |              |                |                        |               |              | T(1)           |                    |          |               |          |               |               |          |              |        |
| 82          |              |                | L (2)                  |               |              |                |                    |          |               | (I)<br>M |               |               |          |              |        |
| 82a         |              |                |                        | (I) N         | <b>R</b> (2) |                |                    |          |               |          |               | K (1)         |          |              |        |
| 86          |              |                |                        |               |              | D(2)           |                    |          |               |          |               |               |          |              |        |
| 92          | C(I)         | C(I)           | C(I)                   | C (2)         | C(I)         |                |                    | C(2)     |               | C (2)    |               | C(j)          | C(I)     | C(I)         | C(])   |
| 93          | A (5)        | A (6)          | A (I)                  | L (6)         | A (4)        | T (6)          | V (8)              | A (2)    | T (6)         | A (5)    | T (3)         | A (2)         | A (5)    | D(1)         | A (1)  |
| 94          | R (39)       | R (26)         | N (18)                 | (6) H         | R (35)       |                | R (14)             | R (29)   | <b>R</b> (27) | R (34)   | <b>R</b> (36) | R (39)        | R (36)   | ļ            | R (16) |
| 103         | W (13)       | W (14)         | W (15)                 | W (3)         | W (16)       | M (7)          | W (10)             | W (14)   | (2) M         | (£) M    | M (2)         | W (12)        | (11) M   | ( <u>(</u> ) | M (3)  |
| See footnot | e to Table   | : 18.          |                        |               |              |                |                    |          |               |          |               |               |          |              |        |

203

residues to keep; however, searching through the tabulation of immunoglobulin sequences (Kabat et al., 1991), one finds that there are human variable domain sequences which have most of the framework residues that need to be preserved. For example, the "humanization" of the murine antibody, HyHEL-5, would require keeping nine murine framework residues in the  $V_{L}$ , using the human  $V_x$  sequence, BI (or REI and a few others), as template, and 13 framework residues in the V<sub>H</sub> using the human  $V_H$  sequence, AND (or 21/28'CL, and a few others). On the other hand, the "humanization" of the murine antibody, B13I2, would require the retention of only three murine framework residues in the  $V_L$ , using the human  $V_{\kappa}$  sequence, CUM (or NIM), as template, and only two framework residues in the  $V_{H}$ , using the human  $V_H$  sequence, M72 (or M74 and a few others). It is possible that there exist other human sequences that are even more similar to these murine domains, that are known but were not included in the compilation of Kabat et al. (1991).

The results presented in Tables 22 and 23 could be used in the design of a "humanization" protocol for an antibody of unknown structure. If a high degree of sequence similarity to an antibody of known threedimensional structure exists, the results for the latter could be used. If no obvious sequence similarity exists, the results which are common to all the antibodies analysed could be used as a first guess and the protocol later refined, if needed, by site-directed mutagenesis studies.

It is seen from Tables 22 and 23 that many of the important framework residues flank the CDRs. Among these flanking positions are most of the framework residues that are involved in the contact with the opposite domain (Table 8) and many of those which are in contact with the CDRs (Tables 18 and 19). Moreover, all of the framework residues which have been observed to participate in the binding to antigen (Amit et al., 1986; Sheriff et al., 1987; Padlan et al., 1989; Bentley et al., 1990, Fischmann et al., 1991; Tulip et al., 1992a), are in these flanking regions. These results suggest that, if during "humanization", not just the CDRs are transplanted, but also some of the residues immediately adjacent to the CDRs, there would be a better chance of retaining the ligand-binding properties of the original antibody. The likelihood will be even greater if the first few amino acids in the N-termini of both chains are transplanted also, since some of them are found to be in contact with CDRs. In fact, the N-termini are contiguous with the CDR surface and are in a position to be involved in ligand binding (Fig. 4). It should be noted that the N-termini of the light and heavy chains are not equivalent in this regard, with the N-terminus of the light chain being more involved in the contact with the CDRs (this finding may have important implications for the properties of single-chain antibodies where either the end of the heavy chain component is linked to the beginning of the light chain (Huston et al., 1988), or vice versa (Bird et al., 1988), especially when residues in the N-terminus are excised).

(ii) "Humanization" by replacing surface residues to make an antibody more "human-like". It may be possible to reduce the antigenicity of a nonhuman Fv, while preserving its antigen-binding properties, by simply replacing those exposed residues in its framework regions which differ from those usually found in human antibodies (Padlan, 1991). This would "humanize" the surface of the xenogenetic antibody while retaining the interior and contacting residues which influence its antigen-binding characteristics. The judicious replacement of exterior residues should have little, or no, effect on the interior of the domains, or on the interdomain contacts.

The solvent accessibility patterns of the Fv of Kol (PDB Entry: 2FB4) and of J539 (PDB Entry: 2FBJ) have been analysed (Padlan, 1991) and are reproduced here. The fractional accessibility values for the framework residues in the Kol and J539  $V_L$  are compared in Table 24 and those for the framework residues in the Kol and J539  $V_{\rm H}$  are presented in Table 25. Examination of these tables reveals a very close similarity in the exposure patterns of the Fvs of Kol (a human IgG1, $\hat{\lambda}$ ) and J539 (a murine IgA, $\kappa$ ). Indeed, in almost all the positions in which the two patterns differ significantly, one or both antibodies have glycine. Here, glycine is designated as being completely exposed if its  $\alpha$ -carbon is accessible to the solvent probe and completely buried otherwise (see footnote to Table 16), so that the slightest difference in structure could result in a different exposure designation for this amino acid.

The very close similarity of the exposure patterns for the variable domains of Kol and J539 points to the close correspondence of the tertiary structures of the homologous domains and of the dispositions of the individual residues. This is particularly remarkable since (a) these antibodies are from different species, (b) their light chains are of different types (J539 has a  $\kappa$  light chain, while Kol has a  $\lambda$  light chain), (c) half of their CDRs, specifically CDR1-L, CDR3-L and CDR3-H, have very different lengths and backbone conformations (Table 8, Fig. 5), and (d) Kol and J539 have only 44 identical residues out of the 79 corresponding positions in the  $V_L$ framework and 60 out of the 87 in the  $V_H$  framework. An even closer similarity in overall structure and in the exposure patterns can be expected for two molecules that are more similar in sequence than this pair. These results suggest that the solvent exposure of a residue can be more easily predicted than perhaps its involvement in the maintenance of the combining site structure.

The procedure that was proposed (Padlan, 1991) for reducing the antigenicity of a xenogeneic variable domain, while preserving its ligand-binding properties, would replace only the exposed framework residues which differ from those of the host with the corresponding residues in the most similar host sequence. Thus, the framework residues, which are at least partly exposed in the corresponding domains of Kol or J539 (those with pB, mE, or Ex designations in Tables 24 and 25), would be replaced, while the framework residues, corresponding to those which in Kol and J539 are completely or mostly buried (mB and Bu designations in Tables 24 and

| ure         |  |
|-------------|--|
| nct         |  |
| str         |  |
| al          |  |
| ion         |  |
| ens         |  |
| im          |  |
| e-d         |  |
| thre        |  |
| МП          |  |
| no          |  |
| بيد.<br>سيد |  |
| s           |  |
| ab          |  |
| ь<br>С      |  |
| rin.        |  |
| nu          |  |
| Jo          |  |
| ,<br>,      |  |
| Je,         |  |
| n tl        |  |
| SS i        |  |
| qu          |  |
| CSI         |  |
| ×           |  |
| NOI         |  |
| nev         |  |
| rar         |  |
| D.          |  |
| Irie        |  |
| ā           |  |
| ng,         |  |
| inti        |  |
| poi         |  |
| ģ           |  |
| wa          |  |
| In          |  |
| 20.         |  |
| ole         |  |
| Tat         |  |
|             |  |

|   | 0021                       |                    |                                | 2 1011-11      | 0.01.0     |             | Antib<br>Byod of | yody       | CICLO       |               | 1 0107     |              | 0/21       | 005       | IVUN         |
|---|----------------------------|--------------------|--------------------------------|----------------|------------|-------------|------------------|------------|-------------|---------------|------------|--------------|------------|-----------|--------------|
| Fosition                                | YECL                       | MCPCOUS            | Hynel-10                       | hynel-3        | K19.9      | 4-4-20      | 10-+01 g         | 1/-00      | 71010       | C17           | 1-6191     | 70NIA        | 11/2       | 6.10      |              |
| 7                                       | Ţ                          | I                  | )                              | ja.,           | H          | >           | Λ                | Ţ          | ٨           | Ι             | Ţ          | <b></b>      | <b>}i</b>  | H         | <b></b> i    |
| 4                                       | L                          | M                  | L                              | L              | Σ          | M           | Σ                | Σ          | M           | Μ             | M          | ٦            | Μ          | Σ         | M            |
| 6                                       | 0                          | 0                  | 0                              | 0              | 0          | ¢           | 0                | 0          | ¢           | ø             | ð          | 0            | 0          | 0         | 0            |
| 11                                      | ' <del>[</del>             | L                  | L                              | M              | Γ          | L           | Ļ                | Ļ          | L           | L             | Г          | Σ            | L          | Г         | M            |
| 13                                      | Α                          | ٧                  | >                              | ۷              | A          | >           | >                | A          | ٨           | ¥             | A          | A            | >          | >         | T            |
| 19                                      | ٨                          | ^                  | ٨                              | >              | ^          | ¥           | A                | ٨          | A           | >             | ۷          | ٨            | v          | Λ         | 2            |
| 21                                      | I                          | Σ                  | Г                              | M              | Π          | 1           | ŗ,               | H          | Ι           | I             | 1          | Z            | X          | Σ         | H            |
| 23                                      | ပ                          | υ                  | U                              | υ              | U          | U           | с<br>С           | ပ          | c           | U             | U          | C            | c          | U         | ပ            |
| 35                                      | W                          | W                  | M                              | W              | W          | W           | ¥                | ¥          | M           | 8             | M          | M            | W          | M         | W            |
| 37                                      | 0                          | 0                  | ď                              | ď              | 0          | L           | ſ                | Ø          | T           | Q             | Ø          | ð            | ð          | ð         | ð            |
| 47                                      | M                          | <u>ب</u>           | <b>د</b>                       | M              | J          | Г           | Г                | L          | L           | Ц             | Г          | L            | Ч          | J         | L            |
| 48                                      |                            | I                  |                                | H              | Ţ          | I           | <b>⊢−−</b> ai    | -          | _           | ٨             | Ţ          | <b></b> 1    | <b>,</b>   | -         |              |
| 58                                      | ٨                          | >                  | 1                              | >              | >          | >           | ٧                | >          | ٨           | >             | >          | >            | >          | >         | >            |
| 61                                      | R                          | R                  | R                              | R              | R          | R           | R                | R          | R           | R             | R          | ሄ            | R          | ĸ         | R            |
| 62                                      | ц                          | ц                  | <u>L.</u>                      | Ц              | <u>(1.</u> | Ц           | ш                | ц          | н           | (IL           | ц          | Ĩ.           | [I.        | i1.       | ц            |
| 71                                      | γ                          | Ц                  | Ľ.                             | Y              | Υ          | Ĭ <b>L</b>  | ( <b>I</b> ,     | ¥          | <u>لت</u>   | Υ             | Υ          | Y            | ц          | ц         | Y            |
| 73                                      | Ч                          | L                  | Г                              | Ц              | L          | L           | L                | Ч          | L           | L             | Г          | L            | L.         | Г         | L            |
| 75                                      | Π                          | Ţ                  | -                              | T              | Ĭ          | I           | I                | Π          | Ţ           | Ţ             | 1          | Ţ            | Ι          | I         | I            |
| 78                                      | M                          | V                  | >                              | Z              | J          | v           | >                | L          | >           | L             | L          | M            | ٨          | >         | >            |
| 82                                      | ۵                          | D                  | ۵                              | ۵              | D          | ۵           | D                | D          | D           | ۵             | Ω          | D            | Ω          | ۵         | ۵            |
| 83                                      |                            |                    |                                |                |            |             |                  |            |             | ii.           |            |              |            |           |              |
| 84                                      | A                          | V                  |                                | A              | A          |             |                  | A          |             |               | A          | A            | A          | ۷         | A            |
| 86                                      | Υ                          | Υ                  | Υ                              | Υ              | Y          | Υ           | γ                | Y          | Y           | Y             | Υ          | Y            | Y          | Y         | Y            |
| 88                                      | ပ                          | C                  | C                              | c              | c          | ပ           | ပ                | ပ          | c           | ပ             | U          | C            | C          | c         | c            |
| 102                                     | F                          | T                  | Ŧ                              | Ļ              | [          | Ţ           | <b>[</b>         | Į          | Į.          | <del>[-</del> | Ţ          | F            | [          | Ţ         | H            |
| 104                                     | L                          | Ļ                  | Ц                              | L              | L          | Г           | L                | Г          | L           | Г             | Г          | L            | L          | L         | L            |
| 106                                     | L                          | I                  | _                              |                |            |             |                  |            | I           |               | I          | L            |            | L         | 1            |
| An inward                               | -pointing                  | residue is des     | signated as bu                 | rried if at le | ast 50% (  | of its side | e chain is       | inaccessil | ole to solv | ent. Solv     | ent acces  | sibilities v | vere com   | puted as  | described    |
| and | elv (Padlar                | 1990h). res        | sidue exnosun                  | e is defined i | in the con | text of ar  | n isolated a     | domain     | See footno  | ote to Tal    | hle 16 for | the defini   | tion of sc | dvent acc | sessibility. |
| The cor                                 | sig (a usuu<br>ardinatee u | r, rover, vare the | arua angadana<br>nga considera | in Table 1     | 8          |             |                  |            |             |               |            |              |            |           |              |
| THE COL                                 | JULIIAICS L                | ISCU WCIC LUN      | USC CUINICITY                  | T III T T T T  | 0          |             |                  |            |             |               |            |              |            |           |              |

|             | L         | able 21. Inw | vard-pointing | , buried fran | nework r | esidues in | the $V_{\rm H}$ c | of murine | Fabs of     | known tl                                      | nrec-díme | nsional st   | ructure |     |          |
|-------------|-----------|--------------|---------------|---------------|----------|------------|-------------------|-----------|-------------|---|-----------|--------------|---------|-----|----------|
|             |           |              |               |               |          |            | Antib             | ody       |             |   |           |              |         |     |          |
| Position    | J539      | McPC603      | HyHEL-10      | HyHEL-5       | R19.9    | 4-4-20     | BV04-01           | 36-71     | B13I2       | D1.3  | Yst9-1    | <b>AN</b> 02 | 17/9    | 8F5 | NC41     |
| 2           | >         | ٨            | >             |               | ٧        |            |                   | >         | >           | ۷   | Λ         | >            | Λ       | 2   | ļ        |
| 4           | L         | L            | L             | Ц             | L        | L          | Ч                 | L         | Г           | Ц   | Ц         | L.           | Ц       | Γ   | L        |
| 6           | ш         | ш            | Ш             | ð             | 0        | ш          | Е                 | 0         | н           | щ   | щ         | Ш            | Н       | 0   | 0        |
| 12          | 2         | ٧            | >             | Σ             | 2        | 2          | Λ                 | Λ         | >           | 2   | >         | >            | >       | >   | К        |
| 18          | L         | L            | L             | >             | Λ        | Σ          | Ц                 | Λ         | <b>ب</b> ـر | Ц   | Ц         | 0            | Ļ       | >   | v        |
| 20          | Г         | L            | Г             | I             | X        | Г          | L                 | Σ         | Ļ           | <b>}</b> 1                                    | Ţ         | L            | Г       | L   | I        |
| 22          | С         | C            | C             | c             | J        | C          | C                 | U         | C           | C   | υ         | J            | U       | υ   | U        |
| 24          | Y         | Т            | >             | ¥             | V        | ۲          | A                 | ۷         | A           | >   | Т         | 7            | A       | F   | A        |
| 27          | Ц         | Ĺ            |               | Y             | Υ        | ц          |                   | Υ         | ۲.          | ц   | ĹĿ        | Υ            | н       | ц   | Y        |
| 29          | Ľ.        | ĹL,          | <u> </u>      | Ц             | ĹĿ       | لتم        | Ľ,                | ц         | ц           | Ц   | íL,       | I            | لت      | -   | ഥ        |
| 36          | M         | W            | W             | W             | Ŵ        | W          | M                 | W         | W           | W   | W         | W            | M       | M   | M        |
| 38          | R         | R            | R             | Х             | K        | R          | R                 | х         | R           | R   | R         | R            | ዳ       | К   | Х        |
| 40          |           |              |               |               |          | S          |                   |           |             |   |           |              | Т       | R   |          |
| 46          |           |              | Щ             | Щ             |          |            |                   |           |             |   |           | ш            |         |     |          |
| 48          | Ι         | Ι            | Σ             |               | Ι        | v          | ٨                 | I         | Λ           | L   | L         | M            | Λ       | I   | Μ        |
| 49          |           | A            |               |               |          | A          | A                 |           | A           |   |           |              | A       |     |          |
| 99          |           | R            | R             |               |          | R          | R                 |           | R           | R   | R         | Я            | R       |     | R        |
| 67          | ц         | Ц            | I             | A             | Г        | íĽ.        | Ľ                 | T         | Ľ.          | L   | Ц         | I            | Ĺ       | A   | ĹL,      |
| 69          | I         | >            | Ι             | Н             | L        | I          | I                 | L         | I           | Ι   | I         | I            | I       | I   | Ц        |
| 71          | R         | R            | R             | A             | >        | R          | R                 | >         | R           | Х   | R         | ч            | ĸ       | Λ   | Ц        |
| 73          |           |              |               |               |          |            | D                 |           |             |   | z         |              | Z       |     |          |
| 76          |           |              |               |               |          | S          |                   |           |             |   |           |              |         |     |          |
| 78          | Г         | L            | Y             | <             | A        | Λ          | L                 | A         | Γ           | V   | Г         | ц            | Ļ       | A   | A        |
| 80          | Γ         | L            | Ļ             | M             | M        | Г          | L                 | Σ         | Γ           | Ц   | Г         |              | L       | Г   | Ц        |
| 82          | M         | X            | L             | Г             | L        | Σ          | Σ                 | L         | Σ           | Σ   | Σ         | L            | Σ       | L   | I        |
| 82c         | >         | L            | >             | Γ             | L        | L          | Г                 | L         | Ч           | <u>, , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , </u> | -         | ٧            | Γ       | Ц   | <u>ц</u> |
| 86          | D         | D            | D             | D             | D        | Ω          | D                 | D         | D           | D   | D         | D            | D       | D   | D        |
| 88          | Α         | Υ            | Α             |               | A        |            | A                 | A         | Y           | A   | A         | A            | V       | A   | A        |
| 90          | Y         | ۲            | Y             | Y             | Υ        | ٢          | Y                 | Y         | Y           | Υ   | γ         | Υ            | Υ       | Υ   | Ŀ,       |
| 92          | С         | c            | C             | c             | с<br>С   | c          | U                 | C         | C           | U   | C         | C            | c       | C   | C        |
| 94          | R         | R            | z             | н             | R        |            | Ж                 | К         | ¥           | R   | R         | 8            | R       |     | R        |
| 107         | Т         | T            | Т             | Т             | ł        | L          | T                 | T         | <b>[</b>    | T   | T         | Г            | F       | [   | F        |
| 601         | >         | >            | >             | L             | Γ        | ^          | >                 | Г         | Г           | L   | Λ         | Λ            | Λ       | >   | L        |
| 111         | >         | >            | >             | >             | >        | >          | >                 | >         | >           | >   | >         | ٧            | >       | Λ   | >        |
| See footnot | e to Tabl | e 20.        |               |               |          |            |                   |           |             |   |           |              |         |     |          |

25), would be retained. With this procedure also, the number of framework residues in xenogeneic domains, that would be needed to be replaced by human residues, was found to be not very large in the cases examined (Padlan, 1991).

### Structural aspects which relate to catalysis by antibodies

Antibodies can be elicited against essentially any structure (if presented properly) so that it may be possible to generate catalytic antibodies of any desired specificity. However, antibodies capable of high enzymatic rates may not be so readily obtainable.

It is difficult to compare the interaction between antibody and antigen and that between enzyme and substrate. While we can analyse the interatomic contacts in an antibody-antigen complex (in the crystal), a comparable study cannot be performed on an enzyme-substrate complex, which is usually of fleeting existence. However, a comparison could be attempted using the more stable enzyme-inhibitor complexes, of which a number have been elucidated by X-ray diffraction.

The interactions of various enzymes with protein and peptide inhibitors are presented in Table 26. By and large, the interactions shown in Table 26 are comparable to those presented in Table 14 between antibodies and their specific ligands, except in one respect: more main chain atoms are found to be involved in the enzyme-inhibitor interactions than in the antibody-ligand complexes. This is especially noticeable in the case of hydrogen-bond formation (see also Janin and Chothia, 1990). In the three anti-lysozyme-lysozyme complexes, on average only 15% of the atomic contacts involve main chain atoms, whereas in the enzyme-protein inhibitor complexes the main-chain involvement is almost three times as great; in regard to the hydrogen bonds, in the anti-lysozyme-lysozyme complexes, only about 7% involve main chain atoms, whereas in the enzyme-protein inhibitor complexes, almost one-half of the hydrogen bonds involve main chain atoms. The number of interatomic contacts between antibody and peptide ligand (Table 14) and between enzyme and peptide inhibitor (Table 26) are roughly the same, but here again there are more hydrogen bonds involving main chain atoms in the enzyme-peptide inhibitor than in antibody-peptide complexes.

The polypeptide backbone is more restricted in its movements than are side chains. Furthermore, hydrogen bonds involving main chain atoms are more "directed" and will be stronger (Jeffrey and Saenger, 1991). Compared to antibody combining sites, the active sites of enzymes are more rigid, being constructed with mainchain and side-chain components that are held in place by strong interactions with surrounding structural elements. A ligand would therefore be interacting with a much less deformable site in an enzyme than in an antibody.

The plasticity of the combining site could have serious implications for the enzymatic activity of catalytic anti-MIMM 31/3-D bodies. A flexible active site cannot produce as much "strain" (Jencks, 1969) on the substrate as could a rigid site and this may result in the diminution of enzymatic efficiency. The observation that most of the binding to antigen involves side chain atoms is perhaps an omen that antibodies with catalytic efficiencies comparable to those of enzymes will be a rarity.

# CONCLUDING REMARKS

Antibodies are remarkable molecules and serve as paradigms for macromolecular recognition. They have a binding site that is designed to accommodate ligands of variable structure (the combining site) and sites that bind to ligands of constant structure (e.g. the C1q binding site). The available crystallographic data allow us to assess only the first of these sites (the combining site), but nature's use of structure to achieve a particular function is already evident from this example.

The basic element used in the construction of an antibody molecule is the anti-parallel  $\beta$ -pleated sheet, which is strong because the hydrogen-bonding pattern involves not just one stretch of polypeptide chain, as in an  $\alpha$ -helix, but several in a synergistic arrangement. The individual strands in a  $\beta$ -sheet would be resistant to proteolytic digestion and the sheet might not unravel even if some of the loops connecting the strands were cleaved. Indeed, the connecting loops could be varied in size and sequence and still preserve the basic structure of the  $\beta$ -sheet (as is seen in the variable domains).

If one were to construct a binding site that could better withstand the action of digestive enzymes, one is well served to use the surface of a  $\beta$ -sheet. Moreover, the chances of preserving that site during evolution would be good, since such a site can better survive mutational events. In view of the stability of the sheet structure, about the only mutation that can significantly affect the binding site structure is one that alters a ligand-contacting residue; replacements of even the residues immediately adjacent to the ligand-contacting residues, unless drastic, may have little effect on the topography of the exposed surface.

On the other hand, if one were to construct a binding site that is deformable and that is easily varied (by mutation), one would choose to build it with loops. The structure of a loop is very sensitive to changes in length and sequence. Moreover, the residues in a loop are more likely to be exposed to solvent, and, thereby, are more available for ligand binding, than residues in a  $\beta$ -sheet. A survey of the exposures of the residues in the J539 and Kol  $V_L$  and  $V_H$  (computed in the context of isolated domains) reveals that the ratio of exposed (mE and Ex designations as defined in the footnote to Table 16) to buried (mB and Bu designations) residues is 0.70 when in the  $\beta$ -sheets (theoretically, this should be close to 1.0 since in an infinite sheet every other residue would be buried) and 1.72 when in the CDRs. Since some CDR residues are in fact in the sheets, the difference would have been even

| _   |
|---|
|   |
| нянанананананананана<br>  |
| രം<br>് വ പ പ്  |
| 88<br>NYYCC<br>NYYCC<br>NYYCC<br>NYYCC<br>NYYCC<br>NYYCC<br>NYYCC<br>NYYCC<br>NYYCC<br>NYYCC  |
| 88<br>89<br>80<br>80<br>80<br>80<br>80<br>80<br>80<br>80<br>80<br>80<br>80<br>80<br>80  |
| 70<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.DF.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>T.Y.F.L.I<br>T.Y.F.L.I<br>T.T.Y.L.I<br>T.T.Y.L.I<br>T.T.Y.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S.T.F.L.I<br>S. |
| 60<br>V. RF.<br>V. DRF.<br>V. DRF.<br>V. RF.<br>V. RF.<br>V. RF.<br>V. RF.<br>V. CRF.<br>V. CRF.<br>V. CRF.<br>V. DRF.<br>V. DRF.<br>V. DRF.<br>V. DRF.   |
| U D K N   |
|   |
| 49<br>49<br>49<br>49<br>49<br>49<br>49<br>49<br>49<br>40<br>40<br>40<br>40<br>40<br>40<br>40<br>40<br>40<br>40  |
| 0 49<br>      <br>  |
| 5 40 49<br>1 1 1 1 1 1 4<br>2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2   |
| 35 40 49<br>1 1 111 1<br>WYQQSP.PWIY<br>WYQQSP.LLIY<br>WYQQSP.LLIY<br>WYQQSP.LLIY<br>WYQQSP.LLIY<br>WYQQSP.LLIY<br>WYQQSP.LLIY<br>WYQQSP.LLIY<br>WYQQSP.LLIY<br>WYQQSP.LLIY<br>WYQQSP.LLIY<br>WYQQSP.LLIY<br>WYQQSP.LLIY<br>WYQQSP.LLIY<br>WYQQSP.LLIY<br>WYQQSP.LLIY   |
| 20 35 40 49<br>1 1 11 1<br>1 1 11 1<br>1 1 11 1<br>1 1 11 1<br>2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2 2  |
| 10 20 20 35 40 49<br>1 1 1 1 1 1<br>1 1 1 1 1 1<br>1 1 1 1 1<br>1 1 1 1   |
| 10 20 35 40 49<br>EI.L.Q. T.A. V.I.C WYQQSP.PWIY<br>DIVMTQL.VV.M.C WYQQSP.LLIK<br>DIVLTQL.VV.L.C WYQQSP.LLIK<br>DIVLTQL.VV.L.C WYQQSP.LLIK<br>DIVLTQL.VV.L.C WYQQSP.LLIK<br>DIQMTQL.VV.I.C WYQQSP.LLIK<br>DIQMTQL.VV.I.C WYQQSP.LLIK<br>DIQMTQL.VA.I.C WYQQSP.LLIK<br>DIQMTQL.VA.I.C WYQQSP.LLIK<br>DIQMTQL.VA.I.C WYQQSP.LLIK<br>DIMTQL.VA.I.C WYQQSP.LLIK<br>DIMTQL.VA.I.C WYQQSP.LLIK<br>DIMTQL.VA.I.C WYQQSP.LLIK<br>DIMTQL.VA.I.C WYQQSP.LLIK<br>DIMTQL.VA.I.C WYQQSP.LLIK<br>DIVMTQL.VA.I.C WYQQSP.LLIK<br>DIVMTQL.VV.MC WYQQSP.LLIK<br>DIVMTQL.VV.MC WYQQSP.LLIK   |

Table 22. The framework residues in V<sub>L</sub> which are in contact with CDRs or with V<sub>H</sub> and those which are inward-pointing in murine Fabs of known three-dimensional structure

| presented in Tables 8, and 18-21.                  | the opposite domain.                       | en found to be involved in antigen binding.       |
|--|--|---|
| mmary of the results presented in Tables 8, and 18 | esidues which contact the opposite domain. | esidues which have been found to be involved in a |

Table 23. The framework residues in V<sub>H</sub> which are in contact with CDRs or with V<sub>L</sub> and those which are inward-pointing in murine Fabs of known three-dimensional structure

| 102 110<br> | WGQ.T.V.V.             | WG. T.V V.  | WG.T.L.V.            | WGQ.T.V.V. | W.O.T.V.V.           | WGT.L.V.       | WGQ.T.L.V. | WGQ.T.V.V.  | WGQ.T.V.V. | WGQ.T.V.V.  | WGT.V.V.   | WGQ.T.L.V. | <       |   |
|-------------|------------------------|-------------|----------------------|------------|----------------------|----------------|------------|-------------|------------|-------------|------------|------------|---------|---|
|             |                        | ບ<br>·      | Ω                    |            | с                    |                | ო          |             |            |             |            |            |         |   |
| 06          | D.A.YYCAR              | .D.A. YYCAN | D.A. YFCAR           | .DYYCT.    | D.A.YYCTR            | D.A. YYCTR     | .D.A.YYCAR | .D.A. YYCVR | .D.A.YFCAR | D.A. YYCAR  | .D.A.YYCD. | .D.A.FFCAR | < < < < |   |
| 82abc       | L.L.M. V.              | Y.L.L.V.    | A.M.LN.L.            | S.V.L.M.L. | L L M. L.<br>A M T.  | L.L.M.L        | V.L.ML.    | L.H.ML      | F.L.LK.V   | L.L.M.L.    | A.L.LL.    | A.L.IL.    | << < <  |   |
| 70          | KF.I.R.N<br>RFIV.R.T   | RI.I.R.     | KA.F.A.<br>KT.L.V.R. | RFTI.R.D.  | RFTI R N<br>KT I V K | RF. I.R. N.    | RL.I.K     | RF.I.R.D    | RISI.R     | RFTI.R.N.   | KA.I.V.T.  | RF.F.L     | < < <<< |   |
|             |                        | U           | Ω                    |            | ц                    |                | 2          |             |            |             |            |            |         |   |
| 49          | KGLEWI.                | N.LEYMG     | GLEWI.               | SLEWVA     | O LEWT               | K. L. WVA      | GLEWL.     | K. LEWVA    | NKLEWM.    | C. K. LEWVA | KGLEWI.    | GLEWM.     | ~~~~    | * |
| 4 -         | WVRQ.<br>WVRO          | WIRK.       | WVKQF.<br>WVKQ.      | WVRQS      | WVRQ.                | WVRQ.          | WVRQ.      | WVRQ.       | WIRQ.      | WVRQ1       | WVKQF      | W.KQ.      | ~ ~ ~ ~ |   |
|             |                        | ပ           | ۵                    |            | ድ                    |                |            |             |            |             |            |            |         |   |
| 30          | . FDFS                 | LI          | YTFS<br>YTFT         | FTFS       | FTFT<br>VTFT         | . FTFS         | F.LT       | .FSFN       | YSIT       | FSFS        | F.IK       | Y.FT       | ~ ~ ~ ~ | * |
| 20          | LLCA                   | L.L.V       | V.M.C.A              | M.L.C.A    | T.C.T.               | L.L.C.A        | V.J.I.C.V  | L.L.L.A     | Q.L.C.V    | L.L.L.A     | V.L.C.T    | V.I.C.A    | <       |   |
| 10          | V.L.E. V.<br>V.L.E. V. | V.L.E.V.    | V.L.Q.               | L.EV.      | EV.L.EV.             | V.L.E.         | .V.L.EV    | E P . E V   | .V.L.EV.   | .V.L.EV     | .V.L.QV.   | .I.L.QK.   | ~ ~ ~   |   |
|             | J539<br>Mrpren3        | HYHEL-10    | HYHEL-5<br>R19.9     | 4-4-20     | Yst9-1<br>26-71      | 50-71<br>B1312 | D1.3       | BV04-01     | AN02       | 17/9        | 8F5        | NC41       |         |   |

See footnote for Table 22.

Table 24. Solvent exposures of side chains of framework residues in Kol and J539  $V_{\rm L}$ 

|          |            | Fra         | ctional        | accessibili | ty           |            |
|----------|------------|-------------|----------------|-------------|--------------|------------|
| Position | Residue    | K0l<br>Evnc | 111 <b>7</b> 0 | Residue     | J339<br>Evnc | Sure       |
|          | Kesiuue    | Ехрс        |                | Kesidue     | Слрс         |            |
| 1        | Q          | 1.00        | Ex             | Е           | 0.99         | Ex         |
| 2        | S          | 1.00        | Ex             | I           | 0.16         | Bu         |
| 3        | V          | 0.77        | mE             | V           | 0.87         | Ex         |
| 4        | L          | 0.00        | Bu             | L           | 0.00         | Bu         |
| 5        | Т          | 0.92        | Ex             | Т           | 0.80         | mE         |
| 6        | Q          | 0.00        | Bu             | Q           | 0.00         | Bu         |
| 0        | Р          | 0.62        | mE<br>Ev       | 5           | 0.89         | EX         |
| 0        | r          | 1.00        | EX             | r<br>A      | 1.00         |            |
| 10       | S          | 1.00        | Fx             | ī           | 0.94         | Ex         |
| 11       | A          | 0.34        | mB             | Ť           | 0.30         | mB         |
| 12       | s          | 0.71        | mE             | Â           | 0.59         | pB         |
| 13       | Ĝ          | 1.00        | Ex             | A           | 0.00         | Bu         |
| 14       | Т          | 0.73        | mE             | S           | 0.78         | mE         |
| 15       | Р          | 0.75        | mE             | L           | 0.79         | mE         |
| 16       | G          | 1.00        | Ex             | G           | 1.00         | Ex         |
| 17       | Q          | 0.69        | mE             | Q           | 0.64         | mE         |
| 18       | R          | 0.79        | mE             | K           | 0.74         | mЕ         |
| 19       | V          | 0.21        | mB             | V           | 0.22         | mB         |
| 20       | Т          | 0.62        | mE             | Т           | 0.65         | mЕ         |
| 21       | I          | 0.00        | Bu             | I           | 0.00         | Bu         |
| 22       | S          | 0.92        | Ex             | T           | 0.69         | mE         |
| 23       | C          | 0.00        | Bu             | C           | 0.00         | Bu         |
| 35       | W          | 0.00        | Bu             | W           | 0.00         | Bu         |
| 36       | Ŷ          | 0.00        | Bu             | Ŷ           | 0.00         | Bu         |
| 3/       | Q          | 0.46        | рВ<br>Du       | Q           | 0.14         | Bu         |
| 20<br>20 | V<br>I     | 0.00        | ы<br>Бu        | V<br>V      | 0.24         | mb<br>mF   |
| 39<br>40 | L<br>P     | 0.75        | Ev Ev          | S           | 1.00         | IIIC<br>Ev |
| 40       | G          | 1.00        | Ex.            | G           | 1.00         | Ex         |
| 42       | M          | 0.74        | mF             | т           | 0.90         | Ex         |
| 43       | A          | 0.62        | mE             | S           | 0.30         | mB         |
| 44       | Р          | 0.00        | Bu             | P           | 0.00         | Bu         |
| 45       | K          | 0.95        | Ex             | K           | 0.90         | Ex         |
| 46       | L          | 0.23        | mB             | Р           | 0.43         | pВ         |
| 47       | L          | 0.15        | Bu             | W           | 0.16         | Bu         |
| 48       | Ι          | 0.00        | Bu             | Ι           | 0.00         | Bu         |
| 49       | Y          | 0.39        | mB             | Y           | 0.42         | р <b>В</b> |
| 57       | G          | 1.00        | Ex             | G           | 1.00         | Ex         |
| 58       | V          | 0.14        | Bu             | V           | 0.13         | Bu         |
| 59       | Р          | 0.70        | mE             | Р           | 0.61         | mE         |
| 60       | D          | 0.95        | Ex             | A           | 1.00         | Ex         |
| 61       | ĸ          | 0.31        | mB<br>D        | к<br>Г      | 0.36         | mB<br>Du   |
| 02<br>63 | Г<br>С     | 0.12        | Bu             | г<br>с      | 0.00         | Bu<br>Ev   |
| 63<br>64 | S<br>G     | 0.85        |                | G           | 0.94         |            |
| 65       | s          | 1.00        | Du<br>Ex       | S           | 1.00         | Du<br>Fy   |
| 66       | ĸ          | 0.41        | pB             | Ğ           | 1.00         | Ex         |
| 67       | S          | 1.00        | Ex             | s           | 1.00         | Ex         |
| 68       | G          | 1.00        | Ex             | G           | 1.00         | Ex         |
| 69       | А          | 0.71        | mE             | Т           | 0.75         | mE         |
| 70       | S          | 1.00        | Ex             | S           | 0.98         | Ex         |
| 71       | А          | 0.00        | Bu             | Y           | 0.09         | Bu         |
| 72       | S          | 1.00        | Ex             | S           | 0.70         | mE         |
| 73       | L          | 0.00        | Bu             | L           | 0.00         | Bu         |
| 74       | A          | 0.74        | mE             | Т           | 0.43         | pВ         |
| 75       | I          | 0.00        | Bu             | I           | 0.00         | Bu<br>F    |
| ס/<br>דד | G<br>G     | 1.00        | EX<br>Ev       | IN<br>T     | 0.83         | EX<br>Ev   |
| 11       | <b>Ц</b> Т | 1 (1()      | 17.X           |             | 0.02         | 1.3        |

| 78   | L | 0.00 | Bu | Μ | 0.00 | Bu |
|------|---|------|----|---|------|----|
| 79   | Q | 0.76 | mE | E | 0.63 | mE |
| 80   | S | 1.00 | Ex | Α | 0.96 | Ex |
| 81   | Ε | 0.78 | mЕ | Е | 0.91 | Ex |
| 82   | D | 0.09 | Bu | D | 0.13 | Bu |
| 83   | E | 0.64 | mE | А | 0.55 | pВ |
| 84   | Т | 0.34 | mB | Α | 0.00 | Bu |
| 85   | D | 0.30 | mB | Ι | 0.58 | pВ |
| 86   | Y | 0.00 | Bu | Y | 0.00 | Bu |
| 87   | Y | 0.16 | Bu | Y | 0.11 | Bu |
| 88   | С | 0.00 | Bu | С | 0.00 | Bu |
| 98   | F | 0.04 | Bu | F | 0.00 | Bu |
| 99   | G | 0.00 | Bu | G | 1.00 | Ex |
| 100  | Т | 0.59 | pВ | Α | 1.00 | Ex |
| 101  | G | 1.00 | Ex | G | 0.00 | Bu |
| 102  | Т | 0.00 | Bu | Т | 0.00 | Bu |
| 103  | Κ | 0.82 | Ex | K | 0.79 | mE |
| 104  | V | 0.00 | Bu | L | 0.00 | Bu |
| 105  | Т | 0.86 | Ex | E | 0.89 | Ex |
| 106  | V | 0.19 | Bu | L | 0.44 | pВ |
| 106a | L | 0.70 | mE |   |      |    |
| 107  | G | 1.00 | Ex | K | 0.77 | mE |

See footnote to Table 16 for the definition of solvent accessibility.

more pronounced if only the CDR residues which are in loop regions were used in the comparison. Thus the mutation of a loop residue could have a profound effect on ligand binding, either directly, since by being more accessible the residue is more likely to be involved in the contact, or indirectly, since a change in its character could more easily affect the conformation of the local structure or that of the whole loop.

It comes as no surprise, therefore, that Clq binding, which is a desirable trait in all antibody types, (probably) involves residues in a sheet, while antigen binding involves loops.

One wonders whether deformability is built into (some) CDR structures. Deformability of the combining site structure may permit "induced fit", which could result in better binding to ligand. Deformability may also result in the capacity to bind to many different ligands (polyreactivity). The ability to react to a greater variety of antigens using fewer antibodies, albeit with low affinity, affords an organism a distinct survival advantage. The observation that the occurrence of glycines in CDR3-H is a natural consequence of the preferred mode of transcription of D-gene segments (Abergel and Claverie, 1991) is of relevance. In view of the fact that glycines can confer flexibility to a polypeptide segment and that CDR3-H is often observed to play a central role in ligand binding, a deformable combining site may be the norm. It would be interesting to compare pre-immune and mature antibodies in this respect. Are pre-immune antibodies more deformable than mature ones? Is the rigidification of the combining site structure a factor in affinity maturation?

An increased rigidity of the combining site can be achieved by reducing the inherent flexibility of the individual CDRs (by reducing the number of glycines,

Table 25. Solvent exposures of side chains of framework residues in Kol and J539  $V_{H}$ 

|          |         | Frac | ctional          | accessibili | ty   |          |
|----------|---------|------|------------------|-------------|------|----------|
|          |         | Kol  |                  |             | J539 |          |
| Position | Residue | Expo | sure             | Residue     | Expo | sure     |
| 1        | E       | 1.00 | Ex               | E           | 1.00 | Ex       |
| 2        | V       | 0.23 | mB               | V           | 0.37 | mB       |
| 3        | Q       | 0.82 | Ex               | K           | 0.82 | Ex       |
| 4        | L       | 0.00 | Bu               | L           | 0.10 | Bu       |
| 5        | V       | 0.87 | Ex               | L           | 1.00 | Ex       |
| 6        | Q       | 0.00 | Bu               | E           | 0.09 | Bu       |
| 7        | S       | 0.94 | Ex               | S           | 0.94 | Ex       |
| 8        | G       | 1.00 | Ex               | G           | 1.00 | Ex       |
| 9        | G       | 0.00 | Bu               | G           | 0.00 | Bu       |
| 10       | G       | 1.00 | Ex               | G           | 1.00 | Ex<br>Ex |
| 11       | V       | 0.90 | EX               |             | 0.81 | EX       |
| 12       | Ň       | 0.25 | mb<br>mE         | Ň           | 0.23 | md<br>Ev |
| 15       | Q<br>D  | 0.71 | nB               | У<br>Р      | 0.67 | EX<br>mE |
| 14       | r<br>G  | 1.00 | рв<br>Бх         | г<br>G      | 1.00 | Ev       |
| 15       | R       | 0.73 | mF               | G           | 1.00 | Ex       |
| 10       | S       | 0.75 | mF               | S           | 0.75 | mF       |
| 18       | L       | 0.28 | mB               | Ľ           | 0.26 | mB       |
| 19       | R       | 0.66 | mE               | ĸ           | 0.75 | mE       |
| 20       | Ĺ       | 0.00 | Bu               | L           | 0.00 | Bu       |
| 21       | S       | 0.71 | mE               | S           | 0.82 | Ex       |
| 22       | С       | 0.00 | Bu               | С           | 0.00 | Bu       |
| 23       | S       | 1.00 | Ex               | Α           | 1.00 | Ex       |
| 24       | S       | 0.00 | Bu               | Α           | 0.00 | Bu       |
| 25       | S       | 0.87 | Ex               | S           | 1.00 | Ex       |
| 26       | G       | 1.00 | Ex               | G           | 1.00 | Ex       |
| 27       | F       | 0.10 | Bu               | F           | 0.10 | Bu       |
| 28       | Ι       | 0.85 | Ex               | D           | 0.72 | mE       |
| 29       | F       | 0.00 | Bu               | F           | 0.00 | Bu       |
| 30       | S       | 0.74 | mE               | S           | 0.83 | Ex       |
| 36       | W       | 0.00 | Bu               | W           | 0.00 | Bu       |
| 37       | V       | 0.00 | Bu               | V           | 0.00 | Bu       |
| 38       | ĸ       | 0.10 | Bu               | ĸ           | 0.31 | mB       |
| 39<br>40 | Q       | 0.15 | Bu<br>E.         | Q           | 0.28 | mB<br>mE |
| 40       | A<br>D  | 0.93 |                  | A<br>D      | 0.75 | mE       |
| 41<br>42 | P<br>G  | 0.90 | EX<br>Ev         | P<br>G      | 1.00 | mc<br>Ev |
| 42       | ĸ       | 0.86 | Ex               | ĸ           | 0.86 | Ex       |
| 44       | G       | 1.00 | Ex               | G           | 1.00 | Ex       |
| 45       | L       | 0.00 | Bu               | Ľ           | 0.00 | Bu       |
| 46       | Ē       | 0.75 | mE               | Ē           | 0.73 | mE       |
| 47       | w       | 0.10 | Bu               | w           | 0.04 | Bu       |
| 48       | v       | 0.00 | Bu               | I           | 0.00 | Bu       |
| 49       | Α       | 0.00 | Bu               | G           | 0.00 | Bu       |
| 66       | R       | 0.36 | mB               | K           | 0.51 | pВ       |
| 67       | F       | 0.00 | Bu               | F           | 0.00 | Bu       |
| 68       | Т       | 0.87 | Ex               | Ι           | 0.88 | Ex       |
| 69       | Ι       | 0.00 | Bu               | Ι           | 0.00 | Bu       |
| 70       | S       | 0.78 | mE               | S           | 0.79 | mE       |
| 71       | R       | 0.11 | Bu               | R           | 0.00 | Bu       |
| 72       | N       | 0.61 | mE               | D           | 0.55 | pB       |
| 73       | D       | 0.44 | pВ               | N           | 0.43 | pВ       |
| 74<br>75 | S       | 0.85 | Ex               | A           | 0.97 | Ex       |
| 15       | K.      | 0.88 | Ex               | K           | 0.77 | mE       |
| /0<br>77 | N       | 0.69 | mE               | N           | 0.68 | mE<br>mP |
| //<br>79 | I<br>T  | 0.41 | р <b>ы</b>       | 5<br>т      | 0.33 | тв<br>р. |
| /0<br>79 | L<br>F  | 0.00 | рu<br>гр         |             | 0.00 | DU<br>mP |
| 77<br>80 | L,<br>L | 0.43 | р <b>о</b><br>Ви | I<br>I      | 0.55 | Bu       |
| 017      | • •     | 0.00 | 110              | L./         | 0.00 | 1,11     |

| 0.1 | 0 | 0.50 | P  | 0 | 0.00 | <b>T</b> 1 |
|-----|---|------|----|---|------|------------|
| 81  | Q | 0.53 | рВ | Q | 0.69 | mE         |
| 82  | Μ | 0.00 | Bu | Μ | 0.00 | Bu         |
| 82a | D | 0.73 | mE | S | 0.58 | pВ         |
| 82b | S | 0.98 | Ex | K | 0.96 | Ex         |
| 82c | L | 0.00 | Bu | v | 0.00 | Bu         |
| 83  | R | 0.73 | mE | R | 0.83 | Ex         |
| 84  | Р | 0.75 | mE | S | 0.90 | Ex         |
| 85  | E | 0.82 | Ex | E | 0.90 | Ex         |
| 86  | D | 0.00 | Bu | D | 0.11 | Bu         |
| 87  | Т | 0.54 | pВ | Т | 0.47 | pВ         |
| 88  | G | 1.00 | Ex | Α | 0.00 | Bu         |
| 89  | v | 0.58 | pВ | L | 0.63 | mE         |
| 90  | Y | 0.00 | Bu | Y | 0.00 | Bu         |
| 91  | F | 0.00 | Bu | Y | 0.08 | Bu         |
| 92  | С | 0.00 | Bu | С | 0.00 | Bu         |
| 93  | Α | 0.00 | Bu | Α | 0.00 | Bu         |
| 94  | R | 0.17 | Bu | R | 0.15 | Bu         |
| 103 | W | 0.09 | Bu | W | 0.07 | Bu         |
| 104 | G | 0.00 | Bu | G | 1.00 | Ex         |
| 105 | Q | 0.93 | Ex | Q | 0.99 | Ex         |
| 106 | G | 0.00 | Bu | G | 0.00 | Bu         |
| 107 | Т | 0.22 | mB | Т | 0.26 | mB         |
| 108 | Р | 0.99 | Ex | L | 0.67 | mЕ         |
| 109 | v | 0.00 | Bu | V | 0.00 | Bu         |
| 110 | Т | 0.76 | mE | Т | 0.69 | mE         |
| 111 | V | 0.00 | Bu | V | 0.00 | Bu         |
| 112 | S | 0.98 | Ex | S | 0.74 | mE         |
| 113 | S | 0.94 | Ex | Α | 0.84 | Ex         |

See footnote to Table 16 for the definition of solvent accessibility.

increasing the number of prolines or asparagines, by shortening the CDR, etc), by increasing the interaction of the CDRs or of the individual CDR residues with surrounding structures (framework and other CDRs), by replacing critical CDR residues with amino acids having fewer degrees of freedom, and/or by strengthening the  $V_L-V_H$  interaction. In this regard, it is interesting to note that the residues which have been replaced during the maturation of the anti-2-phenyloxazolone response, the ligand-contacting residues at positions 34 and 36 of the light chain (Alzari *et al.*, 1990), are also frequently found to be involved in the  $V_L-V_H$  contact (Table 8a).

Another contact that deserves mention is that between framework and CDRs within each domain. The observation that a framework residue can influence the conformation of a CDR implies that differences in framework structure, albeit small, could have a significant effect on the specificity of the combining site. This could explain in part why particular variable region families or subgroups are found to be associated with certain antigen-binding specificities. Conversely, particular CDR-framework combinations may not be favorable and may not be formed (see also Kirkham *et al.*, 1992).

Acknowledgements—I thank my colleagues, Drs Chantal Abergel and Jennifer Tipper, for their critical reading of the manuscript and for comments and discussion, and Dr Allen B. Edmundson and coworkers for kindly providing atomic coordinates for BV04-01.

Table 26. Various enzyme-polypeptide inhibitor interactions

| PDB Code | Enzyme                       | Surf. buried | Ligand                        | Surf. buried | vdW | m.c.vdW | H.b. | m.c. H.b. | I.p. |
|----------|------------------------------|--------------|-------------------------------|--------------|-----|---------|------|-----------|------|
| 1CSE     | Subtilisin                   | 667          | Eglin C                       | 667          | 162 | 75      | 16   | 7         | 0    |
|          | Carisberg                    |              |                               |              |     |         |      | _         |      |
| 3TEC     | Thermitase                   | 674          | Eglin C                       | 670          | 158 | 64      | 16   | 7         | 0    |
| 2PTC     | $\beta$ -trypsin             | 714          | BPTI                          | 588          | 170 | 78      | 16   | 5         | 0    |
| 2SNI     | Subtilisin novo              | 776          | Chyt. inhib. (barley)         | 742          | 180 | 70      | 13   | 9         | 0    |
| 1CHO     | α-Chyt.                      | 701          | Ovomucoid (turkey)            | 628          | 138 | 60      | 12   | 8         | 0    |
| 2KAI     | Kallikrein A                 | 694          | BPTI                          | 606          | 179 | 77      | 14   | 6         | 0    |
| 3SGB     | Proteinase B<br>(S. Griseus) | 571          | Ovomucoid (turkey)            | 545          | 144 | 67      | 11   | 7         | 0    |
| 4SGB     | Proteinase B<br>(S. Griseus) | 578          | Chyt. inhib. (potato)         | 517          | 126 | 62      | 9    | 5         | 0    |
| 1TAB     | Trypsin                      | 662          | Prot. inhib.<br>(Bowman-Birk) | 584          | 134 | 69      | 13   | 5         | 1    |
| 4CPA     | Carboxypep. A                | 598          | Carb. inhib. (potato)         | 483          | 96  | 21      | 9    | 1         | 1    |
| 3APR     | Rhizopuspep.                 | 709          | Peptide inhibitor             | 551          | 145 | 36      | 9    | 5         | 0    |
| 4ER4     | Endothiapep.                 | 814          | Peptide inhibitor             | 696          | 168 | 54      | 10   | 5         | 1    |

See footnote to Table 4 for the definition of contacts.

### REFERENCES

- Abola E. E., Bernstein F. C., Bryant S. H., Koetzle T. F. and Weng J. (1987) Protein Data Bank. In Crystallographic Databases—Information Content, Software Systems, Scientific Application (Edited by Allen F. C., Bergerhoff G. and Sievers R.), pp. 107–132. Data Commission of the International Union of Crystallography, Bonn/ Cambridge/Chester.
- Abergel C. and Claverie J.-M. (1991) A strong propensity toward loop formation characterizes the expressed reading frames of the D segments at the Ig H and T cell receptor loci. *Eur. J. Immunol.* 21, 3021–3025.
- Altschuh D., Vix O., Rees B. and Thierry J.-C. (1992) A conformation of cyclosporin A in aqueous environment revealed by the X-ray structure of a cyclosporin-Fab complex. Science 256, 92–94.
- Alzari P. M., Lascombe M.-B. and Poljak R. J. (1988) Three-dimensional structure of antibodies. A. Rev. Immunol. 6, 555-580.
- Alzari P. M., Spinelli S., Mariuzza R. A., Boulot G., Poljak R. J., Jarvis J. M. and Milstein C. (1990) Three-dimensional structure determination of an anti-2-phenyloxazolone antibody: the role of somatic mutation and heavy/light chain pairing in the maturation of an immune system. *Eur. molec. Biol. Org. J.* 9, 3807–3814.
- Amit A. G., Mariuzza R. A., Phillips S. E. V. and Poljak R. J. (1986) Three-dimensional structure of an antigenantibody complex at 2.8 Å resolution. *Science* 233, 747-753.
- Amzel L. M. and Poljak R. J. (1979) Three-dimensional structure of immunoglobulins. A. Rev. Biochem. 48, 961-997.
- Amzel L. M., Poljak R. J., Saul F., Varga J. M. and Richards F. F. (1974) The three dimensional structure of a combining region-ligand complex of immunoglobulin NEW at 3.5-A resolution. *Proc. natn. Acad. Sci. U.S.A.* 71, 1427–1430.
- Anglister J. (1990) Use of deuterium labelling in NMR studies of antibody: combining site structure. *Q. Rev. Biophys.* 23, 175–203.
- Arnold E., Jacobo-Molina A., Nanni R. G., Williams R. L., Lu X., Ding J., Clark A. D., Jr, Zhang A., Ferris A. L.,

Clark P., Hizi A. and Hughes S. H. (1992) Structure of HIV-1 reverse transcriptase–DNA complex at 7 Å resolution showing active site locations. *Nature* **357**, 85–89.

- Baccala R., Quang T. V., Gilbert M., Ternynck T. and Avrameas S. (1989) Two murine natural polyreactive autoantibodies are encoded by nonmutated germ-line genes. *Proc. natn. Acad. Sci. U.S.A.* 86, 4624–4628.
- Beale D. and Feinstein A. (1976) Structure and function of the constant regions of immunoglobulins. Q. Rev. Biophys. 9, 135-180.
- Benjamin D. C., Berzofsky J. A., East I. J., Gurd F. R. N., Hannum C., Leach S. J., Margoliash E., Michael J. G., Miller A., Prager E. M., Reichlin M., Sercarz E. E., Smith-Gill S. J., Todd P. E. and Wilson A. C. (1984) The antigenic structure of proteins: a reappraisal. A. Rev. Immunol. 2, 67-101.
- Benkovic S. J. (1992) Catalytic antibodies. A. Rev. Biochem. 61, 29–54.
- Bentley G. A., Boulot G., Riottot M. M. and Poljak R. J. (1990) Three-dimensional structure of an idiotope-anti-idiotope complex. *Nature* 348, 254-257.
- Bernstein F. C., Koetzle T. F., Williams G. J. B., Meyer E. F., Jr, Brice M. D., Rodgers J. R., Kennard O., Shimanouchi T. and Tasumi M. (1977) The Protein Data Bank. A computer-based archival file for macromolecular structures. J. molec. Biol. 112, 535-542.
- Bhat T. N., Bentley G. A., Fischmann T. O., Boulot G. and Poljak R. J. (1990) Small rearrangements in structures of Fv and Fab fragments of antibody D1.3 on antigen binding. *Nature* 347, 483-485.
- Bird R. E., Hardman K. D., Jacobson J. W., Johnson S., Kaufman B. M., Lee S.-M., Lee T., Pope S. H., Riordan G. S. and Whitlow M. (1988) Single-chain antigen-binding proteins. *Science* 242, 423–426.
- Bizebard T., Mauguen Y., Skehel J. J. and Knossow M. (1991) Use of molecular replacement in the solution of an immunoglobulin Fab fragment structure. Acta Cryst. B47, 549-555.
- Brady R. L., Edwards D. J., Hubbard R. E., Jiang J.-S., Lange G., Roberts S. M., Todd R. J., Adair J. R., Emtage J. S., King D. J. and Low D. C. (1992) Crystal structure of a chimeric Fab' fragment of an antibody binding tumour cells. J. molec. Biol. 227, 253–264.

- Bruenger A. T. (1991) Solution of a Fab (26-10)/digoxin complex by generalized molecular replacement. Acta Cryst. A47, 195-204.
- Bruenger A. T., Leahy D. J., Hynes T. R. and Fox R. O. (1991) 2.9 Å resolution structure of an anti-dinitrophenyl-spin-label monoclonal antibody Fab fragment with bound hapten. J. molec. Biol. 221, 239-256.
- Bryant S. H., Amzel L. M., Phizackerley R. P. and Poljak R. J. (1985) Molecular-replacement structure of guinea pig IgG1 pFc' refined at 3.1 Å resolution. *Acta Cryst.* **B41**, 362–368.
- Burastero S. E., Casali P., Wilder R. L. and Notkins A. B. (1988) Monoreactive high affinity and polyreative low affinity rheumatoid factors are produced by CD5+ B cells from patients with rheumatoid arthritis. J. exp. Med. 168, 1979–1992.
- Burton D. R. (1985) Immunoglobulin G: functional sites. Molec. Immun. 22, 161-206.
- Burton D. R. (1990a) The conformation of antibodies. In Fc Receptors And The Action of Antibodies (Edited by Metzger H.), pp. 31-54. American Society for Microbiology, Washington, D.C.
- Burton D. R. (1990b) Antibody: the flexible adaptor molecule. Trends biochem. Sci. 15, 64–69.
- Carter P., Presta L., Gorman C. M., Ridgway J. B. B., Henner D., Wong W. L. T., Rowland A. M., Kotts C., Carver M. E. and Shepard H. M. (1992) Humanization of an anti-p185<sup>HER2</sup> antibody for human cancer therapy. *Proc. natn. Acad. Sci. U.S.A.* 89, 4285–4289.
- Chang C.-H., Short M. T., Westholm F. A., Stevens F. J., Wang B.-C., Furey W., Jr, Solomon A. and Schiffer M. (1985) Novel arrangement of immunoglobulin variable domains: X-ray crystallographic analysis of the  $\lambda$ -chain dimer Bence-Jones protein Loc. *Biochemistry* 24, 4890-4897.
- Chaudary V. K., Queen C., Junghans R. P., Waldmann T. A., Fitzgerald D. J. and Pastan I. (1989) A recombinant immunotoxin consisting of two antibody variable domains fused to *Pseudomonas* exotoxin. *Nature* 339, 394–397.
- Chothia C. and Lesk A. M. (1987) Canonical structures for the hypervariable regions of immunoglobulins. J. molec. Biol. 196, 901–917.
- Chothia C., Lesk A. M., Gherardi E., Tomlinson I. M., Walter G., Marks J. D., Llewyn M. B. and Winter G. (1992) Structural repertoire of the human V<sub>H</sub> segments. J. molec. Biol. 227, 799-817.
- Chothia C., Lesk A. M., Tramontano A., Levitt M., Smith-Gill
  S. J., Air G., Sheriff S., Padlan E. A., Davies D., Tulip W.
  R., Colman P. M., Spinelli S., Alzari P. M. and Poljak R.
  J. (1989) Conformation of immunoglobulin hypervariable regions. *Nature* 342, 877–883.
- Chothia C., Novotny J., Bruccoleri R. and Karplus M. (1986) Domain association in immunoglobulin molecules. The packing of variable domains. J. molec. Biol. 186, 651-663.
- Co M. S. and Queen C. (1991) Humanized antibodies for therapy. Nature 351, 501–502.
- Colcher D., Minelli M. F., Roselli M., Muraro R., Simpson-Milenic D. and Schlom J. (1988) Radioimmunolocalization of human carcinoma xenografts with B72.3 second generation (CC) monoclonal antibodies. *Cancer Res.* 48, 4597–4603.
- Colman P. M. (1988) Structure of antibody-antigen complexes: implications for immune recognition. Adv. Immunol. 43, 99-132.
- Colman P. M., Laver W. G., Varghese J. N., Baker A. T., Tulloch P. A., Air G. M. and Webster R. G. (1987)

Three-dimensional structure of a complex of antibody with influenza virus neuraminidase. *Nature* **326**, 358–363.

- Colman P. M., Schramm H. J. and Guss J. M. (1977) Crystal and molecular structure of the dimer of variable domains of the Bence-Jones protein ROY. J. molec Biol. 116, 73-79.
- Colman P. M., Tulip W. R., Varghese J. N., Tulloch P. A., Baker A. T., Laver W. G., Air G. M. and Webster R. G. (1989) Three-dimensional structures of influenza virus neuraminidase-antibody complexes. *Phil. Trans. R. Soc. Lond.* B 323, 511-518.
- Connolly M. L. (1983) Analytical molecular surface calculation. J. appl. Crystallogr. 16, 548-558.
- Cygler M., Boodhoo A., Lee J. S. and Anderson W. F. (1987) Crystallization and structure determination of an autoimmune anti-poly(dT) immunoglobulin Fab fragment at 3.0 A resolution. J. biol. Chem. 262, 643–648.
- Cygler M., Rose D. R. and Bundle D. R. (1991) Recognition of a cell-surface oligosaccharide of pathogenic *Salmonella* by an antibody Fab fragment. *Science* **253**, 442–445.
- Davies D. R. and Chacko S. (1993) Antibody structure. Acc. Chem. Res. 26, 421-427.
- Davies D. R. and Metzger H. (1983) Structural basis of antibody function. A. Rev. Immunol. 1, 87–117.
- Davies D. R. and Padlan E. A. (1992) Twisting into shape. Curr. Biol. 2, 254-256.
- Davies D. R., Padlan E. A. and Segal D. M. (1975a) Three-dimensional structure of immunoglobulins. A. Rev. Biochem. 44, 639-667.
- Davies D. R., Padlan E. A. and Segal D. M. (1975b) Immunoglobulin structures at high resolution. In *Contempo*rary Topics In Molecular Immunology, Vol. 4 (Edited by Inman F. P. and Mandy W. J.), pp. 127–155. Plenum Press, New York.
- Davies D. R., Padlan E. A. and Sheriff S. (1990) Antibodyantigen complexes. A. Rev. Biochem. 59, 439-473.
- Davies D. R., Sheriff S. and Padlan E. A. (1988) Antibody/antigen complexes. J. biol. Chem. 263, 10541-10544.
- Deisenhofer J. (1981) Crystallographic refinement and atomic models of a human Fc fragment and its complex with fragment B of Protein A from *Staphylococcus aureus* at 2.9- and 2.8-Å resolution. *Biochemistry* **20**, 2361–2370.
- De la Paz P., Sutton B. J., Darsley M. J. and Rees A. R. (1986) Modeling of the combining sites of three anti-lysozyme monoclonal antibodies and of the complex between one of the antibodies and its epitope. *Eur. molec. Biol. Org. J.* 5, 415-425.
- Derrick J. P. and Wigley D. B. (1992) Crystal structure of a streptococcal protein G domain bound to an Fab fragment. *Nature* **359**, 752–754.
- Duncan A. R. and Winter G. (1988) The binding site for C1q on IgG. *Nature* 332, 738–740.
- Duncan A. R., Woof J. M., Partridge L. J., Burton D. R. and Winter G. (1988) Localization of the binding site for the human high-affinity Fc receptor for IgG. Nature 332, 563-564.
- Edelman G. M., Cunningham B. A., Gall W. E., Gottlieb P. D., Rutishauser U. and Waxdal M. J. (1969) The covalent structure of an entire  $\gamma G$  immunoglobulin molecule. *Proc. natn. Acad. Sci. U.S.A.* **63**, 78–85.
- Edmundson A. B., Ely K. R. and Abola E. E. (1978) Conformational flexibility in immunoglobulins. In *Contemporary Topics In Molecular Immunology*, Vol. 7 (Edited by Reisfeld R. A. and Inman F. P.), pp. 95–118. Plenum Press, New York.

- Edmundson A. B., Ely K. R., Girling R. L., Abola E. E., Schiffer M., Westholm F. A., Fausch M. D. and Deutsch H. F. (1974) Binding of 2,4-dinitrophenyl compounds and other small molecules to a crystalline  $\lambda$ -type Bence–Jones dimer. *Biochemistry* 13, 3816–3826.
- Edmundson A. B., Ely K. R., Herron J. N. and Cheson B. D. (1987) The binding of opioid peptides to the Mcg light chain dimer: flexible keys and adjustable locks. *Molec. Immun.* 24, 915–935.
- Eigenbrot C., Randal M., Presta L., Carter P. and Kossiakoff A. A. (1993) X-ray structures of the antigen-binding domains from three variants of humanized anti-p185<sup>HER2</sup> antibody 4D5 and comparison with molecular modeling. *J. molec. Biol.* 229, 969–995.
- Ely K. R., Herron J. N., Harker M. and Edmundson A. B. (1989) Three-dimensional structure of a light chain dimer crystallized in water. Conformational flexibility of a molecule in two crystal forms. J. molec. Biol. 210, 601–615.
- Ely K. R., Wood M. K., Rajan S. S., Hodsdon J. M., Abola E. E., Deutsch H. F. and Edmundson A. B. (1985) Unexpected similarities in the crystal structures of the Mcg light chain dimer and its hybrid with the Weir protein. *Molec. Immun.* 22, 93–100.
- Epp O., Colman P., Fehlhammer H., Bode W., Schiffer M., Huber R. and Palm W. (1974) Crystal and molecular structure of a dimer composed of the variable portions of the Bence-Jones protein REI. *Eur. J. Biochem.* 45, 513–524.
- Epp O., Lattman E. E., Schiffer M., Huber R. and Palm W. (1975) The molecular structure of a dimer composed of the variable portions of the Bence–Jones protein REI refined at 2.0 Å resolution. *Biochemistry* 14, 4943–4952.
- Fan Z.-C., Shan L., Guddat L. W., He X.-M., Gray W. R., Raison R. L. and Edmundson A. B. (1992) Three-dimensional structure of an Fv from a human IgM immunoglobulin. J. molec. Biol. 228, 188–207.
- Fehlhammer H., Schiffer M., Epp O., Colman P. M., Lattman E. E., Schwager P., Steigemann W. and Schramm H. J. (1975) The structure determination of the variable portion of the Bence–Jones protein Au. *Biophys. Struct. Mechanism* 1, 139–146.
- Fersht A. R., Shi J.-P., Knill-Jones J., Lowe D. M., Wilkinson A. J., Blow D. M., Brick P., Carter P., Wayne M. M. and Winter G. (1985) Hydrogen bonding and biological specificity analysed by protein engineering. *Nature* 314, 235–238.
- Fischmann T. O., Bentley G. A., Bhat T. N., Boulot G., Mariuzza R. A., Phillips S. E. V., Tello D. and Poljak R. J. (1991) Crystallographic refinement of the three-dimensional structure of the FabD1.3-lysozyme complex at 2.5-Å resolution. J. biol. Chem. 266, 12915–12920.
- Foote J. and Winter G. (1992) Antibody framework residues affecting the conformation of the hypervariable loops. J. molec. Biol. 224, 487-499.
- Furey W., Jr, Wang B. C., Yoo C. S. and Sax M. (1983) Structure of a novel Bence-Jones protein (Rhe) fragment at 1.6 Å resolution. J. molec. Biol. 167, 661-692.
- Garcia K. C., Ronco P. M., Verroust P. J., Bruenger A. T. and Amzel L. M. (1992) Three-dimensional structure of an angiotensin II-Fab complex at 3 Å: hormone recognition by an anti-idiotypic antibody. *Science* 257, 502–507.
- Glockshuber R., Schmidt T. and Plueckthun A. (1992) The disulfide bonds in antibody variable domains: effects on stability, folding *in vitro* and function expression in *Escherichia coli*. *Biochemistry* **31**, 1270–1279.
- Gonzalez-Quintial R., Baccala R., Alzari P. M., Nahmias C., Mazza G., Fougereau M. and Avrameas S. (1990)

Poly(Glu<sup>60</sup>Ala(30Tyr<sup>10</sup>) (GAT)-induced IgG monoclonal antibodies cross-react with various self and non-self antigens through the complementary determining regions. Comparison with IgM monoclonal polyreactive natural antibodies. *Eur. J. Immunol.* **20**, 2383–2387.

- Harris L. J., Larson S. B., Hasel K. W., Day J., Greenwood A. and McPherson A. (1992) The three-dimensional structure of an intact monoclonal antibody for canine lymphoma. *Nature* 360, 369–372.
- He X. M., Rueker F., Casale E. and Carter D. C. (1992) Structure of a human monoclonal antibody Fab fragment against gp41 of human immunodeficiency virus type 1. *Proc. natn. Acad. Sci. U.S.A.* **89**, 7154–7158.
- Helm B. A. (1989) The interaction of human IgE with classspecific Fc-receptors. In *Advances in the Biosciences*, Vol. 74 (Edited by Merret T. and El Shami A. L.), pp. 83–91. Pergamon Press, London.
- Helm B. A., Ling. Y., Teale C., Padlan E. A. and Brueggemann M. (1991) The nature and biological importance of the inter-ε chain disulfide bonds in human IgE. *Eur. J. Immunol.* 21, 1543–1548.
- Herron J. N., He X. M., Ballard D. W., Blier P. R., Pace P. E., Bothwell A. L. M., Voss E. W., Jr and Edmundson A. B. (1991) An autoantibody to single-stranded DNA: comparison of the three-dimensional structures of the unliganded Fab and a deoxynucleotide-Fab complex. *PROTEINS*: *Struc. Funct. Genet.* 11, 159–175.
- Herron J. N., He X.-M., Mason M. L., Voss E. W., Jr and Edmundson A. B. (1989) Three-dimensional structure of a fluorescein-Fab complex crystallized in 2-methyl-2,4-pentanediol. *PROTEINS: Struc. Funct. Genet.* 5, 271–280.
- Huber R. (1986) Structural basis for antigen–antibody recognition. Science 233, 702–703.
- Huber R. and Bennett W. S. (1987) Antibody-antigen flexibility. Nature 326, 334-335.
- Huston J. S., Levinson D., Mudgett-Hunter M., Tai M.-S., Novotny J., Margolies M. N., Ridge R. J., Bruccoleri R. E., Haber E., Crea R. and Oppermann H. (1988) Protein engineering of antibody binding sites: recovery of specific activity in an anti-digoxin single-chain Fv analogue produced in *Escherichia coli. Proc. natn. Acad. Sci. U.S.A.* 85, 5879–5883.
- Janin J. and Chothia C. (1990) The structure of protein-protein recognition sites. J. biol. Chem. 265, 16,027-16,030.
- Jeffrey G. A. and Saenger W. (1991) Hydrogen Bonding in Biological Structures. Springer, Berlin.
- Jencks W. P. (1969) Catalysis in Chemistry And Enzymology. McGraw-Hill, New York.
- Jin L., Fendly B. M. and Wells J. A. (1992) High resolution functional analysis of antibody-antigen interactions. *J. molec. Biol.* 226, 851-865.
- Jones P. T., Dear P. H., Foote J., Neuberger M. S. and Winter G. (1986) Replacing the complementarity-determining regions in a human antibody with those from a mouse. *Nature* 321, 522–525.
- Kabat E. A., Wu T. T. and Bilofsky H. (1977) Unusual distribution of amino acids in complementarity-determining (hypervariable) segments of heavy and light chains of immunoglobulins and their possible roles in specificity of antibody combining sites. J. biol. Chem. 252, 6609-6616.
- Kabat E. A., Wu T. T. and Bilofsky H. (1978) Variable region genes for the immunoglobulin framework are assembled from small segments of DNA—a hypothesis. *Proc. natn. Acad. Sci. U.S.A.* **75**, 2429–2433.

- Kabat E. A., Wu T. T., Perry H. M., Gottesman K. S. and Foeller C. (1991) Sequences of Proteins of Immunological Interest., 5th Edition, US Department of Health and Human Services, Public Health Service, National Institutes of Health (NIH Publication No 91-3242).
- Kabsch W. and Sanders C. (1983) Dictionary of protein secondary structure: pattern recognition of hydrogenbonded and geometrical features. *Biopolymers* 22, 2577–2637.
- Kirkham P. M., Mortari F., Newton J. A. and Schroeder H. W., Jr (1992) Immunoglobulin  $V_{\rm H}$  clan and family identity predicts variable domain structure and may influence antigen binding. *Eur. molec. Biol. Org. J.* 11, 603–609.
- Koehler G. and Milstein C. (1975) Continuous cultures of fused cells secreting antibodies of predefined specificity. *Nature* 256, 495–497.
- Lascombe M.-B., Alzari P. M., Poljak R. J. and Nisonoff A. (1992) Three-dimensional structure of two crystal forms of FabR19.9 from a monoclonal anti-arsonate antibody. *Proc. natn. Acad. Sci. U.S.A.* **89**, 9429–9433.
- Lerner R. A. and Tramontano A. (1988) Catalytic antibodies. Sci. Amer. 258(3), 58-70.
- Lescar J., Riottot M.-M., Souchon H., Chitarra V., Bentley G. A., Navaza J., Alzari P. M. and Poljak R. J. (1993) Crystallization, preliminary X-ray diffration study, and crystal packing of a complex between anti-hen lysozyme anti-body F9.14.7 and guinea-fowl lysozyme. *PROTEINS:* Struct. Funct. Genet. 15, 209–212.
- Lesk A. M. and Chothia C. (1988) Elbow motion in the immunoglobulins involves a molecular ball-and-socket joint. *Nature* 335, 188–190.
- Levitt M. and Perutz M. F. (1988) Aromatic rings act as hydrogen bond acceptors. J. molec. Biol. 201, 751-754.
- Levy R., Assulin O., Scherf T., Levitt M. and Anglister J. (1989) Probing antibody diversity by 2D NMR: comparison of amino acid sequences, predicted structures, and observed antibody-antigen interactions in complexes of two antipeptide antibodies. *Biochemistry* 28, 7168-7175.
- Logtenberg T. (1990) Properties of polyreactive natural antibodies to self and foreign antigens. J. clin. Immunol. 10, 137–140.
- Luzzati V. (1953) Resolution d'une structure cristalline lorsque les positions d'une partie des atomes sont connues: traitment statistique. Acta Cryst. 6, 142–152.
- Mariuzza R. A., Phillips S. E. V. and Poljak R. J. (1987) The structural basis of antigen-antibody recognition. A. Rev. Biophys. Chem. 16, 139–159.
- Marquart M., Deisenhofer J., Huber R. and Palm W. (1980) Crystallographic refinement and atomic models of the intact immunoglobulin molecule Kol and its antigen-binding fragment at 3.0 A and 1.9 A resolution. J. molec. Biol. 141, 369-391.
- Mian I. S., Bradwell A. R. and Olson A. J. (1991) Structure, function and properties of antibody binding sites. J. molec. Biol. 217, 133–151.
- Miller S. (1990) Protein-protein recognition and the association of immunoglobulin constant domains. J. molec. Biol. 216, 965-973.
- Morrison S. L., Johnson M. J., Herzenberg L. A. and Oi V. T. (1984) Chimeric human antibody molecules: mouse antigenbinding domains with human constant region domains. *Proc. natn. Acad. Sci. U.S.A.* 81, 6851–6855.
- Morrison S. L. and Oi V. T. (1988) Genetically-engineered antibody molecules. *Adv. Immunol.* 44, 65–92.

- Novotny J., Bruccoleri R., Newell J., Murphy D., Haber E. and Karplus M. (1983) Molecular anatomy of the antibody binding site. J. biol. Chem. 258, 14,433–14,437.
- Novotny J., Bruccoleri R. E. and Saul F. A. (1989) On the attribution of binding energy in antigen-antibody complexes McPC603, D1.3 and HyHEL-5. *Biochemistry* 28, 4735-4749.
- Novotny J. and Haber E. (1985) Structural invariants of antigen binding: comparison of immunoglobulin  $V_L-V_H$  and  $V_L-V_L$  domain dimers. *Proc. natn. Acad. Sci. U.S.A.* 82, 4592–4596.
- Novotny J. and Sharp K. (1992) Electrostatic fields in antibodies and antibody/antigen complexes. *Prog. Biophys. molec. Biol.* 58, 203-224.
- Padlan E. A. (1977a) Structural basis for the specificity of antibody-antigen reactions and structural mechanisms for the diversification of antigen-binding specificities. Q. Rev. Biophys. 10, 35-65.
- Padlan E. A. (1977b) Structural implications of sequence variability in immunoglobulins. Proc. natn. Acad. Sci. U.S.A. 74, 2551–2555.
- Padlan E. A. (1990a) On the nature of antibody combining sites: unusual features that may confer on these sites an enhanced capacity for binding ligands. *PROTEINS: Struct. Funct. Genet.* 7, 112–124.
- Padlan E. A. (1990b) X-ray diffraction studies of antibody constant regions. In Fc Receptors And The Action Of Antibodies (Edited by Metzger H.), pp. 12–30. American Society for Microbiology, Washington, D.C.
- Padlan E. A. (1991) A possible procedure for reducing the immunogenicity of antibody variable domains while preserving their ligand-binding properties. *Molec. Immun.* 28, 489-498.
- Padlan E. A. (1992) Structure of protein epitopes deduced from X-ray crystallography. In *Structure of Antigens*, Vol. 1 (Edited by Van Regenmortel M. H. V.), pp. 29–42. CRC Press, Boca Raton.
- Padlan E. A., Cohen G. H. and Davies D. R. (1985) On the specificity of antibody/antigen interactions: phosphocholine binding to McPC603 and the correlation of three-dimensional structure and sequence data. A. Inst. Pasteur/Immunol. 136C, 271–276.
- Padlan E. A., Cohen G. H. and Davies D. R. (1986) Antibody Fab assembly: the interface residues between CH1 and CL. *Molec. Immun.* 23, 951–960.
- Padlan E. A. and Davies D. R. (1975) Variability of three-dimensional structure in immunoglobulins. *Proc. natn. Acad. Sci. U.S.A.* 72, 819–823.
- Padlan E. A. and Davies D. R. (1986) A model of the Fc of immunoglobulin E. Molec. Immun. 23, 1063-1075.
- Padlan E. A., Davies D. R., Rudikoff S. and Potter. M. (1976) Structural basis for the specificity of phosphorylcholinebinding immunoglobulins. *Immunochemistry* 13, 945–949.
- Padlan E. A., Segal D. M., Spande T. F., Davies D. R., Rudikoff R. and Potter M. (1973) Structure at 4.5 Å resolution of a phosphorylcholine-binding Fab. *Nature New Biol.* 245, 165–167.
- Padlan E. A., Silverton E. W., Sheriff S., Cohen G. H., Smith-Gill S. J. and Davies D. R. (1989) Structure of an antibody-antigen complex: crystal structure of the HyHEL-10 Fab-lysozyme complex. *Proc. natn. Acad. Sci. U.S.A.* 86, 5938-5942.
- Perkins S. J., Nealis A. S., Sutton B. J. and Feinstein A. (1991) Solution structure of human and mouse immunoglobulin M by synchrotron X-ray scattering and molecular graphics

modeling. A possible mechanism for complement activation. *J. molec. Biol.* **221**, 1345–1366.

- Poljak R. J., Amzel L. M., Chen B. L., Phizackerley R. P. and Saul F. (1975a) Structural basis for the association of heavy and light chains and the relation of subgroups to the conformation of the active site of immunoglobulins. *Immunogenetics* 2, 393–394.
- Poljak R. J., Amzel L. M., Chen B. L., Phizackerley R. P. and Saul F. (1975b) Structure and specificity of antibody molecules. *Phil. Trans. R. Soc. Lond. B.* 272, 43–51.
- Poljak R. J., Amzel L. M. and Phizackerley R. P. (1976) Studies on the three-dimensional structure of immunoglobulins. *Prog. Biophys. molec. Biol.* 31, 67–93.
- Poljak R. J., Amzel L. M., Avey H. P., Chen B. L., Phizackerley R. P. and Saul F. (1973) Three-dimensional structure of the Fab' fragment of a human immunoglobulin at 2.8-Å resolution. *Proc. natn. Acad. Sci. U.S.A.* 70, 3305–3310.
- Poljak R. J., Amzel L. M., Chen B. L., Phizackerley R. P. and Saul F. (1974) The three-dimensional structure of the Fab' fragment of a human myeloma immunoglobulin at 2.0-Å resolution. *Proc. natn. Acad. Sci. U.S.A.* 71, 3440–3444.
- Potter M., Padlan E. A. and Rudikoff S. (1976) Localized insertion-deletion mutations: a major factor in the evolution of immunoglobulin structural variability. *J. Immunol.* 117, 626–629.
- Prasad L., Vandonselaar M., Lee J. S. and Delbaere L. T. J. (1988) Structure determination of a monoclonal Fab fragment specific for histidine-containing protein of the phosphoenolpyruvate:sugar phosphotransferase system of *Escherichia coli. J. biol. Chem.* 263, 2571–2574.
- Pumphrey R. (1986) Computer models of the human immunoglobulins: shape and segmental flexibility. *Immunol. Today* 7, 174–178.
- Queen C., Schneider W. P., Selick H. E., Payne P. W., Landolfi N. F., Duncan J. F., Avdalovic N. M., Levitt M., Junghans R. P. and Waldmann T. A. (1989) A humanized antibody that binds to the interleukin 2 receptor. *Proc. natn. Acad. Sci. U.S.A.* 86, 10,029–10,033.
- Rajan S. S., Ely K. R., Abola E. E., Wood M. K., Colman P. M., Athay R. J. and Edmundson A. B. (1983) Threedimensional structure of the Mcg IgG1 immunoglobulin. *Molec. Immun.* 20, 787–799.
- Riechmann L., Clark M., Waldmann H. and Winter G. (1988) Reshaping human antibodies for therapy. *Nature* **332**, 323–327.
- Rini J. M., Schulze-Gahmen U. and Wilson I. A. (1992) Structural evidence for induced fit as a mechanism for antibody-antigen recognition. *Science* 255, 959–965.
- Sarma R. and Laudin A. G. (1982) The three-dimensional structure of a human IgG1 immunoglobulin at 4 Å resolution: a computer fit of various structural domains on the electron density map. J. appl. Cryst. 15, 476-481.
- Sarma V. R., Silverton E. W., Davies D. R. and Terry W. D. (1971) The three-dimensional structure at 6 Å resolution of a human  $\gamma$ G1 immunoglobulin molecule. J. biol. Chem. 246, 3753–3759.
- Sasisekharan V. (1962) Stereochemical criteria for polypeptide and protein structures. In *Collagen* (Edited by Ramanathan N.), pp. 39–77. John Wiley & Sons, New York.
- Satow Y., Cohen G. H., Padlan E. A. and Davies D. R. (1986) Phosphocholine binding immunoglobulin Fab McPC603. An X-ray diffraction study at 2.7 Å. J. molec Biol. 190, 593-604.

- Saul F. A. and Poljak R. J. (1992) Crystal structure of human immunoglobulin fragment Fab New refined at 2.0 Å resolution. *PROTEINS: Struct. Funct. Genet.* 14, 363–371.
- Schiffer M., Ainsworth C., Xu Z.-B., Carperos W., Olsen K. A., Solomon A., Stevens F. J. and Chang C.-H. (1989) Structure of a second crystal form of Bence–Jones protein Loc: strikingly different domain associations in two crystal forms of a single protein. *Biochemistry* 28, 4066–4072.
- Schiffer M., Chang C.-H., Naik V. M. and Stevens F. J. (1988) Analysis of immunoglobulin domain interactions. Evidence for a dominant role of salt bridges. J. molec. Biol. 203, 799–802.
- Schiffer M., Girling R. L., Ely K. R. and Edmundson A. B. (1973) Structure of a  $\lambda$ -type Bence–Jones protein at 3.5-Å resolution. *Biochemistry* **12**, 4620–4631.
- Schlom J. (1991) Antibodies in cancer therapy: basic principles and applications. In *Biologic Therapy of Cancer: Principles* and Practice (Edited by DeVita Jr V. T., Hellman S. and Rosenberg S. A.), pp. 464–481. J. B. Lippincott, Philadelphia.
- Schlom J., Milenic D. E., Roselli M., Colcher D., Bird R., Johnson S., Hardman K. D., Guadagni F. and Greiner J. W. (1991) New concepts in monoclonal antibody based radioimmunodiagnosis and radioimmunotherapy of carcinoma. *Int. J. Rad. appl. Instrum.* 18, 425-435.
- Schulz P. (1988) The interplay between chemistry and biology in the design of enzymatic catalysts. *Science* 240, 426-433.
- Segal D. M., Padlan E. A., Cohen G. H., Rudikoff S., Potter M. and Davies D. R. (1974) The three-dimensional structure of a phosphorylcholine-binding mouse immunoglobulin Fab and the nature of the antigen binding site. *Proc. natn. Acad. Sci. U.S.A.* 71, 4298–4302.
- Sheriff S., Silverton E. W., Padlan E. A., Cohen G. H., Smith-Gill S. J., Finzel B. C. and Davies D. R. (1987) Three-dimensional structure of an antibody-antigen complex. Proc. natn. Acad. Sci. U.S.A. 84, 8075-8079.
- Shoham M., Proctor P., Hughes D. and Baldwin E. T. (1991) Crystal parameters and molecular replacement of an anticholera toxin peptide complex. *PROTEINS*: *Struct. Funct. Genet.* 11, 218–222.
- Silverton E. W., Navia M. A. and Davies D. R. (1977) Three-dimensional structure of an intact human immunoglobulin. *Proc. natn. Acad. Sci. U.S.A.* 74, 5140-5144.
- Stanfield R. L., Fieser T. M., Lerner R. A. and Wilson I. A. (1990) Crystal structures of an antibody to a peptide and its complex with peptide antigen at 2.8 Å. *Science* 248, 712–719.
- Steiner L. A. (1985) Immunoglobulin disulfide bridges: theme and variations. *Biosci. Rep.* 5, 973-989.
- Steinman L. (1990) The use of monoclonal antibodies for treatment of autoimmune disease. J. Clin. Immunol. 10, 30S-38S.
- Steipe B., Plueckthun A. and Huber R. (1992) Refined crystal structure of a recombinant immunoglobulin domain and a complementarity-determining region 1-grafted mutant. J. molec. Biol. 225, 739–753.
- Stevens F. J., Westholm F. A., Panagiotopoulos N., Schiffer M., Popp R. A. and Solomon A. (1981) Characterization and preliminary crystallographic data on the  $V_L$  related fragment of the human  $\kappa I$  Bence Jones protein Wat. *J. molec. Biol.* 147, 185–193.
- Strong R. K., Campbell R., Rose D. R., Petsko G. A., Sharon J. and Margolies M. N. (1991) Three-dimensional structure of murine anti-p-azophenylarsonate Fab 36-71. 1. X-ray crystallography, site-directed mutagenesis, and modeling of the complex with hapten. *Biochemistry* 30, 3739–3748.

- Suh S. W., Bhat T. N., Navia M. A., Cohen G. H., Rao D. N., Rudikoff S. and Davies D. R. (1986) The galactan-binding immunoglobulin Fab J539: an X-ray diffraction study at 2.6 Å resolution. *PROTEINS: Struct. Funct. Genet.* 1, 74-80.
- Sutton B. J. and Phillips D. C. (1983) The three-dimensional structure of the carbohydrate within the Fc fragment of immunoglobulin G. *Biochem. Soc. Trans.* 11, 130–132.
- Tan L. K., Shopes R. J., Oi V. T. and Morrison S. L. (1990) Influence of the hinge region on the complement activation, Clq binding and segmental flexibility in chimeric human immunoglobulins. *Proc. natn. Acad. Sci. U.S.A.* 87, 162–166.
- Tempest P. R., Bremner P., Lambert M., Taylor G., Furze J. M., Carr F. J. and Harris W. J. (1991) Reshaping a human monoclonal antibody to inhibit human respiratory syncytial virus infection *in vivo Bio/Technology* 9, 266–271.
- Theriault T. P., Leahy D. J., Levitt M., McConnell H. M. and Rule G. S. (1991) Structural and kinetic studies of the Fab fragment of a monoclonal anti-spin label antibody by nuclear magnetic resonance. *J. molec. Biol.* 221, 257–270.
- Tormo J., Stadler E., Skern T., Auer H., Kanzler O., Betzel C., Blass D. and Fita I. (1992) Three-dimensional structure of the Fab fragment of a neutralizing antibody to human rhinovirus serotype 2. *Protein Sci.* 1, 1154–1162.
- Tramontano A., Chothia C. and Lesk A. M. (1990) Framework residue 71 is a major determinant of the position and conformation of the second hypervariable region in the  $V_{\rm H}$  domains of immunoglobulins. J. molec. Biol. 215, 175–182.
- Tulip W. R., Varghese J. N., Laver W. G., Webster R. G. and Colman P. M. (1992a) Refined crystal structure of the influenza virus N9 neuraminidase-NC41 Fab complex. J. molec. Biol. 227, 122-148.
- Tulip W. R., Varghese J. N., Webster R. G., Air G. M., Laver W. G. and Colman P. M. (1989) Crystal structures of neuraminidase-antibody complexes. *Cold Spring Harbor Symp. Quant. Biol.* 54, 257–263.

- Tulip W. R., Varghese J. N., Webster R. G., Laver W. G. and Colman P. M. (1992b) Crystal structures of two mutant neuraminidase-antibody complexes with amino acid substitutions in the interface. J. molec. Biol. 227, 149-159.
- Verhoeyen M., Milstein C. and Winter G. (1988) Reshaping human antibodies: grafting an antilysozyme activity. *Science* 239, 1534–1536.
- Vitali J., Young W. W., Schatz V. B., Sobottka S. E. and Kretsinger R. H. (1987) Crystal structure of an anti-Lewis a Fab determined by molecular replacement methods. J. molec. Biol. 198, 351–355.
- Vix O., Rees B., Thierry J.-C. and Altschuh D. (1993) Crystallographic analysis of the interaction between cyclosporin A and the Fab fragment of a monoclonal antibody. *PRO-TEINS: Struct. Funct. Genet.* 15, 339–348.
- Waldmann T. A. (1991) Monoclonal antibodies in diagnosis and therapy. Science 252, 1657–1662.
- Wilson I. A., Stanfield R. L., Rini J. M., Arevalo J. H., Schulze-Gahmen U., Fremont D. H. and Stura E. (1991) Structural aspects of antibodies and antibody-antigen complexes. In *Catalytic Antibodies*, *Ciba Foundation Symp.* 159, 13–39.
- Winter G. P. (1989) Antibody engineering. Phil. Trans. R. Soc. Lond. (Biol.) 324, 537–546.
- Wu T. T. and Kabat E. A. (1970) An analysis of the sequences of the variable regions of Bence-Jones proteins and myeloma light chains and their implication for antibody complementarity. J. exp. Med. 132, 211-249.
- Wu T. T., Johnson G. and Kabat E. A. (1993) Length distribution of CDRH3 in antibodies. *PROTEINS: Struct. Funct. Genet.* 16, 1–7.
- Zheng Y., Shopes B., Holowka D. and Baird B. (1991) Conformation of IgE bound to receptor and in solution. *Biochemistry* **30**, 9125–9132.
- Zheng Y., Shopes B., Holowka D. and Baird B. (1992) Dynamic conformations compared for IgE and IgG1 in solution and bound to receptors. *Biochemistry* 31, 7446-7456.